





2705. I. G. e.



A. Swinton delint

TRAVELS

INTO

NORWAY, DENMARK,

AND

RUSSIA,

IN THE

YEARS 1788, 1789, 1790, AND 1791.

BY

A. SWINTON, Esq.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR G. G. J. AND J. ROBINSON,
PATERNOSTER-ROW.

1792.



TRAVELS

NORWAY, DENMARK,



RUSSIA

LIBRARY

YALE LIBRARY

J. WINSTON FARR

LONDON

PRINTED BY C. G. LEWIS & CO.

2-TERRESTRIAL

1852

TO
HER IMPERIAL MAJESTY
CATHERINE II.
EMPRESS OF ALL THE RUSSIAS,
THIS VOLUME OF
TRAVELS INTO SCANDINAVIA
IS
MOST HUMBLY DEDICATED,
BY
HER IMPERIAL MAJESTY'S
MOST DEVOTED
AND OBEDIENT SERVANT,
A. SWINTON.

PREFACE.

THE northern parts of Europe are seldom visited by English Travellers; nor have any of these, within the space of fifteen years, two Gentlemen only excepted, published their travels.

Mr. Wraxal made a tour of 2,000 miles around the Baltic, in the course of five months. It is impossible either to disregard the admirable alacrity of this Gentleman's movements, or to suppose that he had it in his power to draw many of his reflections from actual observation. Mr. Coxe travelled at a pace somewhat slower, and much more solemn. He has given

us many accurate and useful details concerning manufactures, commerce, population, public revenue, military establishments, and the ceremonials observed in various interviews with which he was honoured by Nobles, Princes, and Kings. These, together with historical extracts from a great number of Writers, with multiplied experiments on the congelation of mercury, made by different Philosophers, at different times and places, swell his volumes to a respectable size as well as price.

It is not, however, long details, biographical, historical, or philosophical, that are expected by every Reader to form the principal parts of books of travels. What the Traveller himself observed, inferred, suffered,
or

or enjoyed—but above all, manners, customs, dress, modes of life, domestic œconomy, amusements, arts, whether liberal or mechanical, and, in a word, whatever tends to illustrate the actual state of society, and that not only among the great, but the body, and even the very lowest of the people: all this, in the opinion of those who read rather for amusement, than the study of either politics or natural philosophy, should enter into those narratives which are supposed to hold a kind of middle rank between the solidity of studied discourse and the freedom of colloquial conversation.

It is on this humble ground that the Author of this volume, notwithstanding what has been published by the respectable Gentlemen above-

mentioned, is induced to offer to the Public a variety of observations which he has been enabled to make, by frequent voyages to Denmark, and a residence of several years in Russia.

With regard to what he has written concerning the naval campaigns between Russia and Sweden, he drew his information on that subject from the British, Russian, German, and Swedish Officers, who were actually engaged in the scenes described; and, as many of our countrymen distinguished themselves in every action which took place, and frequently held the supreme command, the relation becomes to British subjects, particularly interesting.

Should the present be received with indulgence, the Author will be encouraged

couraged to publish another volume, containing additional remarks on the customs, manners, agriculture, and commerce of the Danes and Russians; and also his Travels through Livonia, Courland, part of Poland, and Prussia, in the year 1791. It may be proper here to observe, that the Author, in treating of the commerce and agriculture of Russia, will have it particularly in view, to show how nearly the interests of Great Britain and Russia are connected, and how false that system of policy in either country, that would permit even a coolness to subsist between them.

The Author trusts that the judicious Reader will not censure his mentioning a circumstance connected with the credit due to his publication.

Though

Though he did not arrive in Russia in time to be introduced to the first people, by his honourable and near relation Admiral Greig, that disadvantage was made up to him, in the noblest manner, by the respect universally paid to that great man's memory.

CONTENTS.

LETTER I.

*Voyage across the North Sea—Of the Kraken
—The Coast of Norway, its Appearance—
Of the Ancient Norwegians—Of the
Light-Houses, for the Navigation of the
Baltic—Sea Scene.* P. 1.

LETTER II.

*Of the Skaw, the North Point of Jutland----
The Country of our Ancestors.* P. 11.

LETTER III.

*Of the dangerous Navigation of the Categate
---Of the Hardships of a Sea-faring Life
---Journal of the Voyage in the Categate---
A dreadful Storm---Arrival at Elfsneur.*
P. 13.

LETTER IV.

*Description of the Passage of the Sound—
Danish*

Danish Duties paid here---Elseneur--Helsingburg---Ween Island, the Residence of the Danish Philosopher Tycho Brabe---Copenhagen---Amack Island----Description of the Danish Islands, their Produce and Commerce----Causes of the unprosperous State of Denmark---Anecdote of Sir Algernon Sydney---Of the French Revolution---Reflections upon Liberty. P. 20.

LETTER V.

Mr. Wraxal's Account of Denmark unjust---Of Norway, its great Value to Denmark--Pontoppidan and Wraxal contrasted--New Description of Norway---The ancient Inhabitants---Of the Laplanders, their Customs and Manners---Productions of Lapland---Climate of Norway----Has two Summers and two Winters in the Year---Character of the Norwegians----Customs and Manners---Fisheries---Commerce----Trades and Manufactures---Hints for the Welfare of Norway. P. 36.

LET-

LETTER VI.

Of the History of Norway---History of the Icelandic Republic, from its Origin to its Conclusion---Customs and Manners of the Icelanders----Ancient Expeditions----The Republic of Iceland, the Asylum of Philosophy and Philosophers, when all Europe was sunk in Gothic Darknes---The Cause of its Decline. P. 53.

LETTER VII.

Historical Anecdotes of Denmark---The first Expedition of the Cimbri against the Romans---Laplanders, the most ancient Inhabitants of Sweden and Norway---Odin, the ancient God of the Scandinavians---His remarkable Death---The Origin of the cruel Wars waged among the Goths, or ancient Danes and Swedes themselves, after Odin's Death---Conquest of England by the Danes. P. 62.

LETTER VIII.

Anecdotes of the Kings and Queens of Denmark --- of the famous Margareth---of Eric

Eric---of his Queen, Philippa, Daughter of Henry IV. of England---Character of the Modern Danes---The Conquests of the Goths retarded the Cause of Freedom in Europe---Prince Royal of Denmark---Manners and Customs of the Modern Danes.

P. 69.

LETTER IX.

Voyage from Elfsineur to Riga---First Battle between the Swedes and Danes---Anecdotes of the King of Sweden---Causes of the National Jealousies subsisting between Russia and Sweden---Bornholm---Earthholm, the Gibraltar of Denmark---Why the Baltic is more dangerous than other Seas---Storm in the Baltic---Sea Scene---Character of the common Seamen---Coast of Courland.

P. 81.

LETTER X.

Gulph of Livonia---Of the Construction of the Northern Vessels---The Norwegian Women equally well skilled in Sea Affairs with their Husbands---Dreadful Storm near Riga---A Shipwreck---Narrative of the distressed
Si-

*Situation of the Ship in which the Author
was---Arrival at Riga.* P. 96.

LETTER XI.

*Of the River Dwina---Desert Appearance
of the Country around---Description of Ri-
ga---Anecdotes of the History of Livonia
---Ancient Commerce of Russia---Origin
of the Russian European Commerce---The
Author carries the first Intelligence to
Russia of the Hostilities between the Swedes
and Danes---Critical Situation of the
Russian Frontiers----Anecdotes of Count
Vietinghoff---Of Count Brown, the Gover-
nor of Riga---Origin of the Connection of
Russia with England---The Decline of its
Indian Commerce---Correspondence between
the Russian and British Sovereigns---Scots
Emigrants to Russia, after the Murder of
Charles I.---These advise the Conquest of
the Provinces upon the Baltic, from the
Swedes---A New Character of Charles
XII. of Sweden---Patriotic Plans of the
Great Men in Russia.* P. 107.

LET-

LETTER XII.

*Of the Russians---Of the Germans, the Beauty
of their Women---Masquerade at Riga---
Of the German Music---Customs and Man-
ners of the Germans---Of the River Dwina
and Harbour of Riga.* P. 126.

LETTER XIII.

*Death of Admiral Greig---Anecdotes of this
great man.* P. 135.

LETTER XIV.

*Journey along the Coast of the Gulph of Li-
vonia---Desert Appearance of the Country
---Manner of Travelling---Manner of
Crossing the Rivers, which are without
Bridges or Boats---Post-Houses.* P. 137.

LETTER XV.

*Journey to and Arrival at Pernaw, a forti-
fied Town---Army of Charles XII.---
Siege of Narva and Riga---Trade of Per-
naw---Anecdote of the only Briton who re-
sides at Pernaw---The Livonian Peasan-
try---The Province of Esthonia---State of
Cultivation.* P. 143.

LET-

LETTER XVI.

The City of Revel---The Russian Fleet---The magnificent Funeral of Admiral Sir Samuel Greig, Commander in Chief of the Russian Navy---Funeral Oration spoken by Lieut. Colonel Baron Pablen, translated from the German---Particular Account of the Procession from the Admiralty to the Cathedral ---Epitaph upon Admiral Greig. P. 151.

LETTER XVII.

Of the War with Turkey----Unfortunate Campaign of the Emperor Joseph II---Reasons why the Russians appear slow in their Movements---Naval Campaign in the Baltic between the Russians and Swedes, 1788---Naval Engagement between Admiral Greig and the Duke of Sudermania ---The Empress of Russia's Letter to Admiral Greig---The King of Sweden deserted by his Officers---The Interference of Great Britain and Prussia in his favour.

P. 160.

LETTER XVIII.

Life of Admiral Greig---Expedition of the Russian Fleet to the Mediterranean---Naval Engagement of the Turkish and Russian Fleets---Burning of the Turkish Fleet by Admiral Greig---Promoted by the Empress, in consequence of this gallant Action. ---Further Account of the Naval Campaign 1788. P. 173.

LETTER XIX.

Description of Revel---Sudden Approach of the Russian Winter---The Swedish Fleet---A Palace of Peter the Great. P. 189.

LETTER XX.

Journey from Revel to Petersburg in a Sledge ---Travelling Dress of the Russians---Of the Russians and Finlanders---A Finland Tavern---Narva---Yamburg---Ingria. Winter Scene---Arrival at Petersburg. P. 194.

LETTER XXI.

Petersburg---Journey to Cronstadt, over the frozen

*frozen Gulph of Finland---Taking of Oc-
zakow by the Russians---This Fortrefs will
be of great Importance to Russia. P. 207.*

LETTER XXII.

*Winter Drefs, and Diversions of the Russians—
Manners and Customs—Russian Jubilee—
Ancient and Modern Dreffes of the Russians.
P. 217.*

LETTER XXIII.

*Petersburg contains the most striking Affem-
blage of all Nations---The Russian Thea-
tre---The native good Taste of the Russians
for Music. P. 229.*

LETTER XXIV.

*Easter Holidays-- Of the River Neva---
Russian Climate---Winter Market at Pe-
tersburg, a great Curiosity---The Benefit
which the Russians derive from the severe
Frosts. P. 237.*

LETTER XXV.

*Of the Tartar Army at Petersburg---Reflec-
tions*

tions upon War---Of the Propriety of driving the Turks out of Europe---and giving a King to Greece from the Descendants of Peter the Great. P. 243.

LETTER XXVI.

Former State of Russia---Of the Tartar Nations---Of the Conquest of China by the Tartars. P. 252.

LETTER XXVII.

Finnish Nations---Error of M. Buffon---Customs and Manners of the Tartar Nations---Of the Religion of barbarous Nations---Similarity of Customs between the Tartars and American Indians. P. 262.

LETTER XXVIII.

The different Tartar Tribes---Marriage Ceremonies---A Tartar Divorce---Trial for Adultery in Tartary---Tartarians Gods and Goddesses---Funeral Orations---Anecdotes of the Circassians---A Tartar Love Song. P. 272.

LET-

LETTER XXIX.

Customs and Manners of the Tartars---Interesting Anecdote of the Torgot Horde---Specimens of Tartar Poetry, from the Accounts of the Russian Travellers---M. Pallas's Account of the Kalmucs---Anecdotes of the Tongusians, the best of all the Tartar Nations---Politeness to their Women.

P. 283.

LETTER XXX.

The Russian Amusements upon May-Day---The Approach of Summer.

P. 304.

LETTER XXXI.

Russian Summer---Anecdotes of Prince Nassau---Of Paul Jones---Princess Daschkoff---Count Besborodko---Russian Dances---Russian Amusements in Summer.

P. 307.

LETTER XXXII.

Character of Peter the Great---Russian Nobility---Reflections upon Modern Luxury, as it regards Commerce and Arts---Picture of Modern Russia.

P. 320.

LET-

LETTER XXXIII.

The Arrival of a Russian Regiment from Ozakow at Petersburg, under the Command of an English Officer---Anecdotes of one of the young Grand Dukes---Of Princess Nassau---Of Captain Bentinck, of the British Navy---Of a Portuguese Colonel---Of Lord Wycombe, Mr. Howard, and his Excellency Mr. Whitworth. P. 335.

LETTER XXXIV.

Summer Amusements in the Metropolis.---The Imperial Family---The Public entertained at Count Strogonoff's Gardens. P. 343.

LETTER XXXV.

Russian Climate----A Russian Wedding----Anecdote of an old Russian Soldier---Of a Band of Gypsies. P. 354.

LETTER XXXVI.

Naval Campaign, 1789---Naval Engagement of the Russian and Swedish Galley Fleets---Of the Russian and Swedish Grand Fleets

Fleets in the Baltic---Expedition of a Squadron of the Russian Fleet, under Captain Trevenen, an English Officer, to the Coast of Swedish Finland---Folly of the Northern Powers in keeping such large Fleets---Campaign in Finland. P. 363.

LETTER XXXVII.

Description of the City of Petersburg---Old Petersburg---The Citadel---William's Island---The Exchange---Museum---Imperial Academies---Cadet Corps---Statue of Peter the Great--Imperial Palace, &c. &c. P. 384.

LETTER XXXVIII.

Description of Cronstadt---Fortress of Cronstott---Admiralty---Naval Cadet Academy---Palace of Oranienbaum---Palace of Peterhoff---Anecdotes of Peter the Great. P. 401.

LETTER XXXIX.

The Abbé Chappe D'Auteroche his invidious Account of the Russians---The vague Accounts

counts given by late Travellers, and the Cause of it---Character of the Russians.

P. 416.

LETTER XL.

Of the Plan adopted by Catherine II. for the gradual Emancipation of the Russian Peasantry---Manners and Customs of the Russians---The Simplicity of the Religion of the Peasantry.

P. 423.

LETTER XLI.

Soil of the Province of Ingria---Present State of Agriculture---Economy of the Peasantry---Anecdote of the Grand Duke Paul Petrovitch---His Attempt to Emancipate the Peasants---German Colonies for the Improvement of Agriculture--Anecdote of a Samoeide Member of the Russian Parliament.

P. 439.

LETTER XLII.

Customs and Manners of the Finlanders---Contrast of Character between the Russian and Finlander---Character of the Russians---Native

---Native Politeness and Good Nature---
Anecdote of a Russian Soldier---Of a Russian Sheriff. P. 455.

LETTER XLIII.

Russian Climate---Of the Hot and Cold Baths, their ill Effects upon the Constitution of the Natives---The Russians enabled to bear Cold by warm Furs alone---Physical and Moral Effects of the Baths. P. 472.

LETTER XLIV.

Plan for Reformation in the Management of the Russian Hospitals---Anecdote of M. Plestcheyeff---General Description of the Russian Empire, its Produce and Commerce ---The British Commerce with Russia ill conducted---Proposal for transplanting the whole Nation of Finlanders to the Ukraine. P. 484.

[Faint header text]

[Faint paragraph of text]

LETTER XLIII

[Faint paragraph of text]

LETTER XLIV

[Faint paragraph of text]



ERRATUM.

THE attentive Reader will observe an inconsistency between the second sentence of second paragraph, p. 446, and the first sentence of first paragraph, p. 447. The inconsistency will be obviated, by reading line 1, p. 447, for, "Now it is wonderful that," "*Now it would be wonderful if*"

TRAVELS, &c.

LETTER I.

*Voyage across the North Sea—Of the Kraken
—The Coast of Norway, its Appearance—
Of the Ancient Norwegians—Of the
Light-houses, for the Navigation of the
Baltic—Sea Scene.*

North Sea, October, 1788.

DEAR SIR,

I HAVE again ventured upon the faithless deep, and to such a peripatetic philosopher as myself it makes very little difference where he goes.

This is my third expedition to the north: it is a strange whim to get in love with deserts, with ice and with snow.

B

I de-

I delight to see Nature in her Winter uniform; to be surrounded with rugged rocks and frozen oceans.

This is the dreary season of the year. Few vessels are now plowing the main, unless those steering homewards to their native shores. The winds are, however, favourable to us: the sea nymphs, in the shape of billows, push our ship along.

I sit down for the purpose of writing to you, by a snug fire in the cabin; but the ship rolls in such a manner, that it is with difficulty I can either hold my pen or keep my temper. Perhaps it is the Kraken that moves his huge sides under me? Where shall I find a tub large enough to be thrown out to such a whale; whose eyes behold his tail at the distance of three miles? Surely the works of creation are sufficient of themselves to fill and expand the human mind, though they should not derive any additional grandeur from the affrighted imagination.

Pon-

Pontoppidan gravely records the history of the Kraken from hearsay, although he resided in Norway, into whose creeks this fish sometimes wandered ; but getting aground, died and infected the air with its effluvia. The reverend Bishop does not even aver that he himself was incommoded with this scent: he only mentions those who had.

Pontoppidan has, however, produced more certain evidence of the existence of the sea worm, who drags along his slow length of about one hundred yards. This may well satisfy the admirers of monsters.

Eged, a respectable Norwegian writer, in a voyage to Greenland, gives an account of this serpent, which he himself beheld: but he laughs at the credulity of his countrymen, in regard to their tales concerning the Kraken.

In the year 1786, a Norwegian Shipmaster and his Mate made oath before the

Magistrates of Dundee, that they had seen a large fish, within a few leagues of the coast of Scotland, *which they judged to be three miles in length.*

Unfortunately, they described it as resembling the sea worm. There is no doubt but that it was this animal ; and candid indulgence must attribute their mistake to their fright.

Some philosophers have imagined the existence of a proportion betwixt the size of animals and the planet they inhabit : for instance, they give to Saturn, human animals of sixty feet in stature ; but for this hypothesis, there does not seem to be any analogy in nature. On the contrary, the inhabitants of cold climates, and philosophers suppose that the climate of Saturn is cold, are generally the smallest in stature. If these philosophers are right in their conjectures, the people of Mercury will not exceed seven or nine inches in height.

Creative power has indeed, as far as it has come within our knowledge, observed a certain proportion between the extent of land and that of waters ; and between the animals natives of the one, and the animals inhabitants of the other ; but it does not appear that Nature intended a proportion between men and mountains. The proportion in size between land and sea animals, is not only exact, but even their likenesses to each other ; as the sea lion, the sea horse, the sea dog : and although the whale is much larger than the elephant, the former does not apparently much exceed the latter in strength : besides, the existence of land animals larger than the elephant, has been proved beyond a doubt. Until, therefore, a land animal is found, one, or two, or three miles in length, the existence of the Kraken will always be disputed. Milton alludes to this fabulous animal—

— or that sea beast,
 Leviathan, which God of all his works
 Created hugest that swim th' ocean stream :
 Him, haply slumb'ring on the Norway foam.

On the third day after we left the shores of Britain, the rocks of Norway appeared, heaving their rugged precipices awefully above the waves that foamed underneath. I renewed my acquaintance with every hill and mountain, and hailed the ancient domains of our conquerors.

Norway, extending one thousand miles, from the Naze to the North Cape, is one continued groupe of rocks, hills, mountains, and hanging woods. Norway has her mines of gold and silver too, but these seem intended by Nature rather for ornament than use. Her real wealth, and what perhaps is more real wealth than gold, consists in her forests of timber, her iron and copper mines, and her fisheries.

The Norwegians very early distinguished themselves in naval expeditions; but unfortunately they have only retained their conquests in the north. They planted colonies in Iceland and Greenland, and, from a party of these colonists are descended

scended the Esquimaux, who dwell upon the dreary coasts of Labradore. Sometimes under Kings of their own, sometimes under the Danish Monarchs, they frequently invaded England, Scotland, and Ireland. Denmark, during her former greatness, ruling over Sweden, and all the kingdoms around the Baltic; the name and actions of the Norwegians were lost in that of Danes. At this day, Norway is the only remain of all the Danish conquests—if, indeed, it can now be considered as a conquest; for it had shaken off the Danish yoke for many years before the famous Margaret, daughter of Waldemar, King of Denmark, and wife of Hacquin, King of Norway, effected the union of these two nations.

We were abreast of the Naze just as the lights blazed forth. They are exceedingly useful upon such a dangerous coast, and light-houses are therefore established, at proper places, all along from this cape to Elfineur. They were originally erected

for the benefit of the subjects of the Danish Government, who, very reasonably, demanded of foreigners trading to the east seas, a proportion of the expence. This being readily complied with, the Danes began to think of making those lights a matter of revenue, and yearly increased the dues. As their dominions lay at the entrance of the Baltic, no ships could pass quietly without their permission.

Their extortions at last offended the Hanse-towns, the Dutch, and the English. After much contest, the Danes lowered the Sound duties, and all nations acquiesced in paying the rates then fixed.

The rapid increase of trade within these hundred years, has made this part of the revenues of Denmark very considerable, and the most certain of any they have: it is a revenue of which no other nation has the like—it is entirely independent of the subjects.

The navigation from the Naze to Elfi-neur is the most dangerous in the world, particularly at this season of the year ; and to add to our affliction, there is no moonlight. Here are no regular tides, but rapid currents, setting or running, according as the winds, or other circumstances, influence them.

It is Saturday night : the mariners, forgetting the dangers of the seas, are making merry in the steerage, and drinking the healths of their wives and sweethearts : every seaman is supposed to have the one or the other, if not both. These pleasing entertainments of the heart are reliefs from care, and cheer the brave and honest sailor, amidst his hardships and perils.

I continued upon the deck this evening until eleven o'clock. The waves roll after us with more violence than ever : it is owing to the current, and to the narrow straight we are now entering, called the Sleeve,

Sleeve, the Categate and this making the figure of an arm.

The fable night hangs his dark brown curtain over us—the storm whistles in the shrouds—no objects are distinguishable but the twinkling of the Naze lights, and the white foaming billows that roar around us. Palinurus watches at the helm ; the mariners talk together of dangers and shipwrecks.

LETTER II.

*Of the Skaw, the North Point of Jutland----
The Country of our Ancestors.*

HAIL! daughter of Heaven, orient Light!
despair and melancholy fly before thee: by
thy influence the mind is soothed as with
the presence of a deity!

We this moment see a vessel for the first
time since our departure; she appears to be
a British ship, and we consider her as an
acquaintance. Oh! here is more compa-
ny; I see four Danish shallops to leeward.

Let me tell you, this is a matter of no
small consideration in such dreary weather:
the fine morning is already vanished; the
fogs are at variance with the sun, and al-
most shut out the day. The Skaw light-
house

house is in sight: you will remember the account which I gave you of a storm I encountered near this place, some years ago: I dread ever since to be within fifty miles of it. The Skaw is a low land forming the north point of Jutland, the ancient Cimbrica Chersonesus, from whence issued that hive of people called Angles, who conquered England, and gave their name to our country.

Night approaches, and every sign of stormy weather saddens the heavens. The wind is unfavourable, yet we must do our best, and push on through the dangerous Categate.

I idly wish I could reach the moon with my arm, and turn her face full upon us, though at the expence of the Newtonian system. If we arrive safe at Elfsineur, I will continue my journal.

LETTER III.

*Of the dangerous Navigation of the Categate
 ---Of the Hardships of a Sea-faring Life
 ---Journal of the Voyage in the Categate---
 A dreadful Storm---Arrival at Elfineur.*

Elfineur, Oct. 1788.

WE have, thank God! arrived at Elfineur, after the most dreadful voyage that ever I experienced. We took our departure from the Skaw light, Sunday evening, and entered the Categate: the night dark, and the wind increasing in violence.

I remonstrated with the Captain, advising him to let the ship remain where she was, until he should find a more favourable opportunity. "Poh," said he, "there is no danger; don't be afraid." It was idle to contend; so I put on the best face I could,

could, and went down into the cabin to consult the chart of the Categate. The Captain and Mate were no less anxious on this subject than I was; and neither of them went to bed.

Our first course was directed to the Nidingen lights, upon the coast of Sweden, and our first care to avoid the Treenail, a dangerous shoal lying in the way. You cannot imagine our terror at the moment when involved in total darkness; we reckoned the ship to be abreast of this dreadful shoal, which, for aught we knew, might be within a few yards of us. What adds to the horror of such situations, is, that other ships must be nearly in the same tract, and consequently in danger of running foul of one another.

The Captain took the compasses from me, to measure different charts: he went upon deck with the Mate, came down again, and re-examined his charts.

The

The Captain had a young son, of whom he was very fond. " Oh ! " exclaimed this veteran seaman, attempting to stifle a rising sigh, " I wonder how these young creatures incline to go to sea ! "

" Well," says the Captain, " you condemn me for taking the Categate in contrary winds, and threatening weather? But did not you see another ship to-day do the same? And what would my Owners think of me, were other vessels to make their passage, while I, agreeably to your advice, might be lying in some harbour in Norway? Our Owners do not consider winds and currents; they expect their Shipmasters to be as quick in their voyages as others; and whatever these do, I must do also, or give up my business." " I replied, that no doubt it was the duty of Shipmasters to do every thing for the interest of their employers. At the same time, it was carrying the idea of duty too far, to risk wantonly the lives of themselves and crews. In the present instance, I insisted it would have been acting prudently, to have remained

mained at the entrance of the Categate, or to have gone into some port in Norway.” “ And how would the voyage have proceeded,” interrupted the Captain, “ while we lay in Norway ?”---“ As well as it will do, if you run your ship ashore upon the Treenail.” “ But then consider that men’s wages are running on, and provisions consumed.” “ That,” I observed, “ could not be attributed to the fault of the Shipmaster; and that, were it my own case, after waiting in Norway some reasonable time, for favourable winds, and none should appear in due season for proceeding to the Baltic, I should certainly sail homewards, or act as I thought most advantageous for the Owners: by taking a freight elsewhere, as my orders, or other circumstances might point out.” The Captain smiled: the Mate, discharging the essence of his tobacco, swore he would like to sail with me were I Shipmaster.”

About midnight we saw the Niddingen lights a-head, which eased our hearts a
good

good deal, as we knew from this circumstance that we had passed the Treenail. The Niddingen lights are two in number, in a low situation, standing near to each other.

There are two lights likewise at the Naze, the one higher than the other: abreast of these, vessels have the appearance of being one or two miles separated.

We put the ship about, and made several short tacks during the night, it being equally hazardous upon all sides of us; but as we were clear of the Treenail, I laid myself down in my hammock to enjoy a short repose.

The morning came, and the wind abated. We now approached the Niddingen light-houses, which had been our leading stars in the dark, on the rugged coast of Sweden. A number of ships passed us this day, coming from the Baltic, of different nations. Towards the even-

C ing

ing the wind rose, and directly contrary : we prepared, by reefing top-sails, for a stormy night. The wind increased to a tempest, the top-sails were handed, and the ship laid to.

Our situation was alarming : the storm drove the ship directly towards the Tree-nail ; from which we were not yet far distant. The night was utter darkness, and the lights of the Niddingen were either intercepted by the haze, or too far off to be distinguished. Despair was painted in every face ; but as no effort availed, the sailors, worn-out with watching the preceding evening, went to sleep ;—some below, some upon deck. The storm now raged with redoubled violence : the ship laboured amidst the sea, tumbling from side to side, every surge dashing over her, and driving her nearer to the fatal Tree-nail.

Had I inclined to sleep, the roaring of the waves under me, and all around, would have terrified it away.

The

The morning came, and with it hope : I never before beheld with such pleasure the rising of the sun ! The storm continued without abating of its violence until eight o'clock ; when, with the quickness of lightning, it changed, and blew with equal violence from an opposite quarter.

We spread our sails to this favourable hurricane, and soon made the land of the Koll, at the entrance of the Sound ; and passing this, we arrived in Elfsineur-roads at five o'clock in the afternoon.

LETTER IV.

*Description of the Passage of the Sound—
 Danish Duties paid here---Elseneur--Hel-
 sinburg---Ween Island, the Residence of the
 Danish Philosopher Tycho Brabe---Copen-
 hagen---Amack Island----Description of
 the Danish Islands, their Produce and
 Commerce----Causes of the unprosperous
 State of Denmark---Anecdote of Sir Al-
 gernon Sydney---Of the French Revolution
 ---Reflections upon Liberty.*

Zealand, Oct. 1788.

THE narrow sea which separates Zea-land, the chief Island of Denmark, from Sweden, and is commonly known by the name of the Sound, begins at the Koll Cape, in the latter kingdom, and the north point of Zealand over against it.

I presume, the name Sound is given
 by

by mariners, from the method they are obliged to take in sailing through this intricate channel, by sounding, or fathoming the depth of water, to direct them in their course.

Elfsineur is the grand turnpike-gate to the Baltic. Here every nation is tributary to Denmark : the only relict of her former greatness, and dominion over all the northern land and seas ! The duties paid at Elfsineur by foreigners amount annually from 70,000 to 80,000*l.* sterling. In 1692, only 250 English ships passed the Sound, while 1100 Dutch traded to the Baltic. The whole duties then collected at Elfsineur did not amount to more than 13,000*l.* sterling. In the year 1787, above 3000 English and Dutch ships passed the Sound, a striking instance of the increase of the British trade, and of its ascendancy over that of every rival.

Here are always numerous fleets of merchant ships passing and repassing, who
C 3
must,

must, as an additional acknowledgment of the sovereignty of Denmark, lower their top-sails, or hoist their colours in compliment to the Danish flag displayed from the fortress of Cronenburg; while the Swedish flag from the ramparts of Helfinburg, upon the opposite side, remains unnoticed.

Sweden has a valuable consideration for submitting to this, and for paying the Sound duties, with other nations :---the peaceable possession of the provinces of Schonen, Holland, and Bleking, which had long been the cause of bloody wars betwixt the two nations. Elfsineur is a small town, yet carries on a considerable trade. As Government lay the ships under contribution, so the merchants lay the ships crews, in the sale of brandy, tea, china, and other wares. The streets are crowded with sailors, displaying their oratory in different languages.

The Danes, in former ages, used to raise contributions among foreigners in
a more

a more heroic manner. Those tales of ancient times appear now as romance. The souls of their Frothos, their Canutes, and their Waldemars, are perhaps now doing penance in the bodies of some custom-house clerks, and shopkeepers ; still plundering, though under the more specious name of profit, duties, and commision.

You cannot imagine a more noble prospect, than is presented to the eye, while you sail through the strait separating Denmark from Sweden. The Koll forming the south-west corner of the latter kingdom, heaves its majestic sides to a great height, and furnishes a site for one of the lights for the direction of mariners.

As we come round this mountain, the castle of Cronenburg, and town and roads of Elfsneur, attract our notice, and the delightful shore of Zealand, variegated with parks, woods, and farm-houses, the lands gently swelling into hills, or spread-

ing out into plains. The coast of Sweden to the left, though not mountainous, does not give that idea of fertility, which instantly springs up in the mind on the sight of Denmark. In Sweden the soil in many parts seems bleak and sandy.

We viewed the town of Helsinburg, an irregular collection of red houses, upon the sea shore, fronting Elfsineur, and separated by the channel, not exceeding two English miles in breadth.

Passing the castle of Cronenburg, a fine gothic building, situated close by the water, we enjoyed a prospect of the Island of Ween, distinguished by the ruins of Uranibourg, the city of Heaven, an observatory built by the celebrated Danish astronomer, or Tycho Brahe. It is a flat spot, and situated nearly in the middle of the strait. I took a drawing of this observatory, which is placed upon the south point of this islet. No fragments remain of the city of the Stars, formerly situated in the center of this island.

fland. It has fallen, together with Tycho's system of the planets. However, for the honour of this philosopher, a part remains, both of his system and of his city.

As we sail towards the east from Elsinour, the spires of Copenhagen gradually rise before us to the right ; and upon the left the sea opens, the coast of Sweden running more and more northwards.

The site of Copenhagen is so low, that it seems, even at a small distance, to be built in the water : yet the appearance is truly noble.

This capital of Denmark is formed by Nature to be the mistress of the Baltic.

The Danish islands are placed like sentinels at the entrance, and notwithstanding the passage of the Belt is safer than this by the metropolis, the Danes have wisely contrived that foreigners shall view
the

the relicts of their former power. A frigate is stationed in the Belt, to prevent merchant ships from taking that course, and to oblige them to sail by the Sound.

The Danish Monarch, from his palace windows, sees the fleets of Britain and of Holland in review before him, and subscribing to his revenues : if he sees at the same time his rival Sweden, and provinces, as has been remarked by a certain writer, taken from his ancestors, this circumstance should give him more pleasure than pain : these provinces are the natural property of Sweden, bounded and separated from Denmark by the ocean. They were the occasion, while claimed by the latter, of much blood-shed, as well as bitter inveteracy between the two nations.

Buoys are fixed to direct vessels in the very narrow channel opposite to Copenhagen : for though the sea be broad here, it is shallow in many parts, and altogether unnavigable, except in the most favourable

ble winds and weather. You view wrecks upon every side. This difficult strait is called by mariners the Grounds.

The Island of Amack, upon which stands a part of Copenhagen, and which is not distinguishable from Zealand, bounds this narrow channel to the south; and the small town of Dracor, in Amack, supplies pilots to those ships who make a signal for them. When we have passed Dracor, we are clear of the dangers of the Sound; but other dangers appear in the surrounding Danish islets to the right, and the Swedish reefs of Falsterburn to the left, where, however, a light-house directs the wandering sailor.

I have, in a former voyage, visited most of the Danish islands. Zealand is the largest, and has the honour to contain both the ancient capital of Roschild and that of Copenhagen. Funen, the next in magnitude, lies to the south west of Zealand, and near to the peninsula of Jutland. Be-
tween

tween Zealand and Funen is that arm of the Baltic called the Great Belt. The other islands are, Falster, Langeland, Samsoe, Mona, Femeren, and a number of lesser ones.

The fertility of these islands, if we consider the poor state of agriculture and the climate, is wonderful : their crops are principally rye and oats ; and their pastures maintain numerous herds of all kinds of cattle. As Copenhagen is the only harbour where large vessels can enter, the trade of them all centers there ; and every day, during Summer, the small Danish shallops are bringing in the produce of the islands to this market ; from whence they are again exported to the various parts of the Danish dominions ; one island or province, at this great mart, bartering for the commodities of the other. The fish, the oil, the tar, the iron, the furs of Norway and Iceland, are exchanged for the corn and beef of Zealand, Funen, the other islands, and Jutland.

Denmark

Denmark Proper, consisting of those islands, and this peninsula, cannot spare much to foreign markets, except cattle; but Norway has abundance of commodities left, after bartering with the parent state, and carries on a vast trade with all Europe. Indeed Norway is the brightest jewel in the Danish crown: her woods, her mines, her fisheries are inexhaustible, and her natives brave and hardy.

The productions of Norway, too, are best calculated for the welfare of a commercial kingdom; they are bulky; require many ships to export them, and prove a grand nursery for seamen. The fleet of Denmark is built with her timber, and manned with Norwegian seamen; and if the Danish army were supported from sources equally natural, she would no longer be the jest of the world.

There is no foreign enemy that she has to dread: but if her army is to protect her from enemies at home, her situation
is

is to be pitied. While Denmark and Sweden were contending for empire, numerous armies were necessary to the attainment of their respective objects ; but their standing armies might have ceased at the signing of the treaty of Stockholm, when both parties, after desolating both kingdoms, were at last fully satisfied that all farther contention served not any good purpose. Yet Sweden and Denmark still maintain armies to shew what they are still willing to do, without daring to do any thing. This is being at much pains and expence to mortify themselves. Nations where trade increases, can afford an increase of taxes : unluckily for Denmark, her taxes have increased without any increase of trade.

A few India goods excepted, she has added nothing to her exports or imports these two hundred years. Her Monarchs have consequently been reduced to the most miserable expedients for supporting their army ; forcing their subjects to take
copper

copper instead of silver coins, &c. Oppression forced complaints, and Government had fits of oeconomy and various schemes of improvement and reformation. The most simple and easy remedy, is, to reduce the army. Revolutions are kindling over Europe, and the King of Denmark will have other Kings to keep him in countenance, in any change that may take place in favour of the liberties of his people.

The Danes made a compliment of their freedom to his ancestor Frederic III. The present Sovereign would act with equal magnanimity and prudence, if he should give back the compliment with a good grace, before the period arrive when he must do it with a bad one. The world at last turns wise, and will no longer submit to be ruled by one, nor by one thousand tyrants, which was frequently the only choice left to a nation. The present times call to mind an anecdote of Sir Algernon Sydney

Sydney when Ambassador at the Court of Denmark. *

In the King's library was a manuscript in which all persons were allowed to write any short motto, or distich ; Sir Algernon wrote down the following :

*Manus hæc inimica Tyrannis,
Ense petit placidam sub libertate quietem.*

The French Ambassador, Monsf. Terlon, understanding, though he did not read Latin himself, that these verses contained some reflections upon the French Government, and alluded to French influence in Denmark, tore them out. The French are now going to adopt this motto, notwithstanding the disgrace put upon it by the learned Monsf. Terlon.

It is, unfortunately, to be apprehended, from so lively and fickle a people as the French,

French, that they will not be satisfied with that rational degree of freedom which is consistent with good government : that they will dream of golden ages before the clouds of the iron one are removed from their horizon ; and request, in childish fits of liberty, for the very crown of their Monarch to play with.

As this nation has long given us the patterns for our cloaths, they will no doubt now attempt to give us patterns of freedom.

Alas ! the consequences of such attempts will stir up an additional number of enemies to those who will naturally oppose them even in their just claims to the liberties of men. Their foolish effort to go beyond the bounds of rational liberty, may give just cause to the Sovereigns of Europe, to endeavour to prevent the contagious example from spreading among their subjects ; and in the struggle, the French may lose a part of their newly re-

deemed inheritance. If the French should abuse what it is now in their power to obtain, a free and equitable government and laws, it may retard rather than forward the cause of freedom throughout Europe. The bloody struggle both of civil and foreign war may deter other nations from endeavouring to shake off the chains of despotism, when they see these succeeded by anarchy and devastation. Upon the other hand, if the foreign troops employed against France refuse to fight against what will be termed the cause of freedom, (an infectious word!) the peace of Europe is at an end for centuries.

Frenchmen lately beheld with envy the situation of Britons, and dared not to hope ever to reach to an equal rank with them among mankind. Britons saw and applauded their noble attempt to break their bonds; and Frenchmen may trust, that the moment in which Britons cease to applaud their conduct, their struggles will obtain every thing but freedom.

The

The British constitution should be their model in forming a new government. The British constitution has many faults, but the happiness, the prosperity, the greatness of our nation proves our government the best in existence!

Frenchmen, as yet inexperienced in what liberty consists, should not venture to model a constitution for themselves. The more exalted their ideas of liberty, the wider they will lead them astray, in endeavouring to reduce those ideas to practice. Painters never draw the human figure so well as when the living substance is actually before their eyes. The British constitution is the best living figure of liberty now in the world. When the French have finished their drawing of another image agreeably to their own ideas, let them compare the two together! Those attributes of freedom, happiness, prosperity, power, must be the standard to judge by!

LETTER V.

*Mr. Wraxal's Account of Denmark unjust---
Of Norway, its great Value to Denmark--
Pontoppidan and Wraxal contrasted--New
Description of Norway---The ancient In-
habitants---Of the Laplanders, their Cus-
toms and Manners---Productions of Lap-
land---Climate of Norway----Has two
Summers and two Winters in the Year---
Character of the Norwegians----Customs
and Manners---Fisheseries---Commerce----
Trades and Manufactures---Hints for the
Welfare of Norway.*

Zealand, Oct. 1788.

“DENMARK, can boast,” says Mr. Wraxal, “of a vast extent of dominion;
“but of what importance are the barren
“and almost uninhabited mountains of
“Norway

“ Norway and Lapland stretching to the
 “ pole, or the plains of Iceland, where the
 “ inhabitants are yet, and will probably
 “ ever remain in the most profound barbarism ?” Mr. Wraxal might as well have added, of what importance is the whole kingdom of Denmark, seeing that Norway is by far the most valuable part ? Writers should be cautious of degrading countries, and their inhabitants, which they have never seen. This gentleman has not even paid any regard to the best accounts of Norway and Iceland.

It is not every thing that is related of Lapland that can with justice be applied to those countries. A considerable part of Norway is as distant from the pole as Great Britain ; and, making allowance for its continental situation, enjoys a climate nearly as mild. It is true, the soil is not the most fertile ; but the name of barren is not suited to a country producing such fine timber, and in such quantities.

Mr. Wraaxhal, determined to abuse Denmark at a time when there was a misunderstanding between the Danish Court and that of London, has rejected every authority in favour of the Danish dominions, both in prose and verse :

——— the tallest pine

Hewn on Norwegian hills to be the mast

Of some great Admiral ——— MILTON.

The Norwegian women are celebrated for their fecundity ; and every inhabitable part of Norway swarms with people : vast regions are covered with woods, we need not say with rocks, because the very rocks are covered with pine trees : it is common to see trees growing, and twisting their roots for their support and nourishment around, and into every crevice of the stone, where there is no soil visible. Every precipice in Norway is overhung with these nodding plumes.

Nature has done much for Norway : but the worthy Bishop of Bergen has done more :

more : he has represented Mr. Wraxal's desert as a perfect paradise, and held up every weed and shell produced in this country to the admiration of posterity.

It is astonishing, with what expedition a heaven or a hell can be created, if once a writer seriously puts his hand to work !

The Bishop very gravely celebrates the Norwegians for their politeness : “ A Norwegian Burgher,” says he, “ is as polite as a Danish Nobleman !”

Might not a compliment be paid to the one, without offending the other ?

I am inclined to call in question the politeness even of a Norwegian Bishop, from this specimen of the Suffragan of Bergen.

Norway, or Norway, has its name from its situation, *i. e.* the northern way ; the way to the north. It is divided into five provinces : first, Wardhus, or Norwegian

Lapland. Of this province it is sufficient to observe, that it lies within the Artic Circle. The natives are a distinct race from the inhabitants of the other provinces: they are an ignorant, but a harmless people.

They were probably the first inhabitants of Sweden and Norway; the first adventurers from Scythia, and driven from the southern parts into those dreary deserts, by new invaders, long before their irruptions into Britain. Historians agree that those swarms first choaked up every corner of the north, and that it was in search of more room, and of bread, rather than of fame and conquest, that they marched to the south.

The poor Laplanders then dwelling in Sweden and Norway, were no doubt first disinherited: they have still traditions among them, of battles with those invaders; and from their manners and customs at this day, we can trace their Scythian origin. The
Goths,

Goths, I should suppose, did not make choice of the northern mountains for a dwelling place, until they had attempted the richer soil, and finer climate of France and Italy. They were driven back by Marius into Germany ; from whence, as it was unable to support increasing swarms of yearly emigrants, they would be obliged to pass over into Scandinavia.

How the Laplanders came into Sweden, and at what period, bids defiance almost even to conjecture. I cannot think they entered Sweden and Norway by the way of Germany. This fine country would have detained them. It is more probable that their unlucky stars led them by the head of the Bothnian Gulph. Those dismal regions upon the frozen ocean, from Wardhus to the northern cape of Kamtsatka, are still inhabited by a race of men similar to the Laplanders, and who, no doubt, had taken the same ill-fated journey from Tartary.

The

The natives of Wardhus maintain themselves chiefly by fishing in Summer; and they lay up a stock of fish too for the long Winter. They have, besides, great herds of rhein deer, which are to them instead of horses and cows: they live upon their milk, seldom kill them, and when they have flesh meat, it is of the bear and other animals, which they procure by hunting. Their habitations are tents in Summer, erected near the most favourable spots for hunting, fishing, and grazing.

In Winter, they *bury* themselves in conical huts, covered with earth, to keep out the severe cold. The furs of the bear and wolf furnish them with cloathing. Unacquainted with luxury, and unaccustomed to hardships, they have few wants.

The Norwegians and Danes have at last prevailed upon them to believe that they are in want of some things, and they exchange their furs for brandy, meal, and other articles. As their country produces
so

so few commodities for trade, they ingeniously contrived some others. They were formerly famous for dealing in winds, thunder, and lightning, wholesale and retail; and *still*, now and then, pick up a foolish mariner to purchase a talisman, and magical notes.

The Crown of Denmark receives little benefit from this class of its subjects: a few skins and fish are all they have to spare. The Danish Government, nevertheless, takes some pains in civilizing the Laplanders; and the Missionaries have converted many of them to Christianity.—Driven, at an early period, from the southern provinces of Sweden and Norway, they were not instructed in the doctrines of Christianity, on their introduction into those kingdoms: but they escaped the deluge of blood with which Christians afterwards covered one another, for ages.—Drontheim is the next province to Wardhus; and here begins what is commonly called Norway, as distinguished from Norwegian

wegian Lapland. The next is Bergen; and the other two, bordering upon the arm of the sea leading to the Categate, are Agerhus and Bahus.

Norway has two Summers and two Winters. Towards the sea coasts, and especially in the southern parts, the climate is mild; neither too hot in Summer, nor too cold in Winter. The neighbourhood of the ocean, easily accounts for this happy temperature. Inland, the Summer is as hot as the Winter is cold. The high mountains obstruct the oblique rays of the Winter sun from warming the deep vallies between them, and retain long, upon their tops, ice and snow.

As the mountains occasion an increase of cold in Winter, so they are the cause of increased heat in Summer.

The sun, more vertical, darts his rays into the vallies, and upon the mountains sides, which, closely surrounding the vallies,
lies,

lies, collect these rays as in a focus. The farther to the north, the effect is the stronger, as the cause is increased by the greater altitude of the sun, and his longer continuance above the horizon. In Lapland, the sun, for some time in Summer, is seen revolving round the earth, without setting; and when he sets, it is for so short a space, that the vallies have not had time to cool, when his fierce rays again heat them.

But this orb, as if it had exhausted its strength and heat, never rises to enlighten these dreary lands in Winter. A feeble twilight, a darkness visible accompanies his approach to the horizon : but his glowing edge is never seen, nor is there a cloud gilded with his beams !

Lapland has only one day, and one night, in the year : her day, of two months continuance ; her gloomy night, of ten !

The moon, however, cheers the Laplander, and the reflection of her rays upon the
the

the snow and ice, which spreads every where, gives sufficient light for their Winter's work and travelling.

Indeed they could not travel at any other season. The snow smooths the rugged way, and enables the rein deer to draw the sledges with amazing rapidity. How admirable is the providence of Nature!—Were the sun to shine upon Lapland during Winter, and at the same time should the snow continue upon the ground, it would deprive the inhabitants of sight.--- Even the reflection of the moon's rays from the snow occasions blindness in many of the natives. The laws of Nature have rendered the continuance of the sun and of snow, for any length of time, above the horizon, incompatible.

The Norwegians are a fine race of men, of a free and generous spirit, and watch over their liberties with unremitting vigilance. Many ages have elapsed since they have settled quietly at home, and ceased to disturb

disturb the liberties of others. The Norwegians are all husbandmen, fishermen, or mariners. There are few other distinct professions among them: every one, as is commonly the case in northern countries in general, is his own taylor, carpenter, shoemaker, smith, &c. They show much ingenuity in every thing they undertake; and some of the greatest curiosities in the Royal Museum at Copenhagen are the handy-works of Norwegian peasants.

The fisheries upon the coasts of Norway, and merchant ships, employ one-half of the natives; the other half are employed in agriculture, the iron and copper mines, cutting, transporting, and sawing of timber, and ship-building. The sea coasts are so formed, as to save the trouble and expence of many nets in their fisheries: the whole is a kind of net-work of rocks, and thousands of small inlets of the sea, always filled in the season with shoals of fish. The Norwegians have only to cast a net at the entrance of the inlet, in order

to prevent the fish from going away, and another to drag them to the shore. Several kinds are salted ; others are cured by the simple process of spreading them upon the rocks.

After laying in their yearly quantity for home consumption, and for the merchant vessels, the Norwegians export vast quantities to every corner of Europe. There are numbers of rivers in Norway ; but an inconveniency occurs, naturally to be expected in such a mountainous country : their navigation, even for small boats, is interrupted by water-walls. The timber cut in the inland forests is sadly broken, before it arrives at the sea-ports, being hurled down every cataract in its way, and with such force, as to be dashed against the rocky bottom of the river beneath. For this there is no remedy, as the carriage by land would be impracticable, and at any rate, attended with an expence double the value of the barks. The property of many different merchants is floated
down

down at the same time, and each is enabled to know his own at its arrival, by his distinguishing mark, put upon the trees at the time of their being cut down in the woods.

Great Britain is the principal market for their timber. The vast quantity exported, and the difficulty of bringing the balks from the new forests, at great distances, which must be resorted to, when those nearer are thinned or cut down, has raised the prices considerably, within these few years ; and the practice of cutting the young trees, for foreign markets, will add to the scarcity and price. The Danish Government ought to make a serious inquiry into these matters, for if the price increases in proportion to what it has done of late, the British importer will find out other markets where to supply himself at cheaper rates.

The Norwegians begin to copy the English in the modelling of their ships,

E

and

and build very fine ones for sale, as well as for their own use. The clumsy galleys of the Hanse-towns, the first European commercial states, are no longer the models for the ships of other nations; though several of the cities who were in this famous compact, still persist in the old fashion of their arks, which first floated upon our seas, in order to preserve, no doubt, some remembrance of their former splendour.

The Norwegians are active and honourable in their dealings, and exceedingly keen in prosecuting schemes of trade.

They are celebrated for their longevity, and of a hardy strong constitution, both of body and mind. They do not bury themselves in furs, as most of the northern people do; they pique themselves on keeping cold at defiance, and, to shew their hardiness, they will even put snow into their bosoms. A warm dress is considered as effeminate: and this idea seems to be
received

received too amongst Britons. At this day, there are greater numbers that die in Britain of cold, than of all other diseases, not originating in colds, put together : and this evil entirely arises from a foolish pride of strutting about in those thin slices of modern manufacture. The golden fleeces of our sheep, given us by kind Nature, to guard us against the peculiar inconstancy of our climate, is fretted away into spider's webs. For my part, I am at no loss to decide which appears most effeminate, to wear a comfortable great-coat, or to shiver to death under a gauze tippet. The Norwegians do not carry the jest so far—it is only with their bosoms they use freedom, in the pride of their heart. They wear cloaths of coarse warm stuffs.

The Norwegians are exceedingly fond of dancing : they are continually trotting to the sound of a violin. In Winter there is a ball in every third house in every town in Norway, each evening : and even in Summer, when their daily labours are over, they assemble in parties, to dance and drink.

I have seen the Norwegian sailors dancing upon their ship's deck at sea, in calm weather; and one never meets with their vessels at sea without hearing a concert, if the weather is moderate. Their music is without melody, and their playing without art; but they are determined to be pleased.

Of a lively disposition, they are quick and violent in their passions, especially when intoxicated. In former times, it was common for the guests at an entertainment to have knives in their belts, ready to determine upon the spot, any quarrel that might arise in the course of the feast. The laws have now curbed this custom of Monarchs; and the Norwegian sells his knife, and all his moveables and immoveables, to enable him to ruin himself by law-suits with every person who vexes him; nay, when he is ruined, he is certain of a subscription from his neighbours, to help him to renew his attacks.

LETTER VI.

Of the History of Norway---History of the Icelandic Republic, from its Origin to its Conclusion---Customs and Manners of the Icelanders----Ancient Expeditions----The Republic of Iceland, the Asylum of Philosophy and Philosophers, when all Europe was sunk in Gothic Darknefs---The Cause of its Decline.

NORWAY, as most other kingdoms, has had her tyrants. It was at a time when the iron hand of despotism bore down justice and freedom, that a chosen band of god-like spirits chose to retire to the frozen plains of Iceland, rather than behold their country overwhelmed in a tide of violence and oppression, which they could not stem. They carried along with them their virtues, and their love of liberty.

They received under their protection the oppressed from every quarter ; and when that Gothic eclipse involved Rome, and with it, all the world in darkness, Iceland was the only spot, if we except the Hebrides, with some of the remoter districts in Ireland and Scotland, both anciently known under the name of Scotia, illuminated with civilization, with arts and sciences.

To Iceland, as to a fortress of heaven, the peaceful philosopher retreated, bringing with him the wrecks of learning saved from the wide ruin. This is the sacred spot ! this is the people degraded by an English traveller !

From the use frequently made of the term barbarism, I am at a loss to guess what they, who make this use of the word, mean. The Norwegians, and particularly the Icelanders, even of the lowest classes, are taught early the duty of men and of Christians.

They

They are fishermen, and have not much occasion for classical education; but every one of them can read, write, and understand the common rules of arithmetic. — Will any one venture to assert, that the lowest ranks of the people of England are equal to them in this respect?

But the history of Iceland is not less distinguished by another circumstance of very great curiosity and importance. Of ancient nations we know not the beginning, of the modern we know not the end.

The history of Iceland, clear and undoubted in its origin, progress, and termination, presents to the mind something that is entire, and by which curiosity is strongly raised, and fully gratified.

The republic of Iceland exhibited, in the course of four hundred years, the revolutions usually incident to nations. The foundations of this government were laid

in the middle of the ninth century, when the encroachments of Kings urged men to take shelter in the uncultivated regions of freedom. Adventurers from Norway, Scotland, the Hebrides, and Ireland, settling with their families and effects on unoccupied shores, wherever the conveniences of pasturage and of fishing invited them, lived at first in patriarchal simplicity and independence.

The increase of population gave birth to disputes, and the institution of laws. The heads of families formed a general assembly, which met annually, and made laws by the general consent, according to new circumstances and situations. Those laws, though at first merely oral, were handed down from father to son with great exactness; and, in the progression of time, they were confirmed by the respect which is usually paid to custom. Letters were introduced with Christianity into Iceland, at the beginning of the eleventh century. The laws of custom, enriched with others drawn

drawn from the stores of literature and the Christian religion, were now written in a book, of which one copy was deposited in the place distinguished by the annual meeting of the general assembly, and another in the house of the Bishop of Iceland.

In the Icelandic Wittenagemot, or general assembly, two men of venerable character were biennially chosen, by general consent, to preside in the courts of justice, where trials were carried on, as in other parts of Europe, by Juries, and declare the law in cases of dispute. Those Consuls, or, as they were called, Law-men, originally recited, and after the introduction of letters, read the laws annually to the heads of families, or freemen, convened in the general assembly; as these again did to their bondmen and their tenants.

There were also provincial assemblies, in which the laws were read or recited to
the

the people of the different districts of the country. And when the laws were written, it was enacted, that they should be read in such sections and portions, and at such stated times, that the whole should be finished in a period of three years. Besides all this, schools were established for the study of the law, but there were not any lawyers by profession.

In the mean time, men of enterprize made excursions into other countries as merchants, as pirates, and as soldiers of fortune ; which gave them an opportunity of becoming acquainted with the laws and customs of other nations, both in the western and eastern parts of Europe. Icelandic soldiers served in the armies of the English, the Danes, the Russians, and also of the Greek Emperors, from whose illustrious capital they imported into their native land many of those laws that were found in the Justinian and Theodosian codes at a later period. And here it is proper to observe, that

that every traveller was obliged, by an express statute, on his return to Iceland, to give an account of whatever had appeared most remarkable in other countries, and of whatever custom might be imitated, with advantage, by his own.

The subjects of the Icelandic republic, so long as they adhered to their laws, and preserved their freedom, flourished in agriculture, in manufactures and in trade; increased in numbers; and in arms appeared respectable in the sight of their neighbours, by sea and land.

Ruined inclosures, vestiges of hedges, with regular plantations of trees and traces of the plough on plains now covered with heath, emphatically mark the contrast in point of cultivation, between the former and the present state of Iceland. Written records shew that the Icelanders traded to all the ports of the world: and their population at this day, under an hundred thousand, has been computed
on

on probable grounds, to have amounted, in the most flourishing period of the republic, to half a million.

At a period when the rest of Northern Europe was sunk in ignorance, and distracted with war, Iceland, the nurse of the muses, as well as of the useful arts, enjoyed the blessings of equal laws, extensive commerce, and profound peace. But this prosperous state of affairs was not of long duration.

Sovereign Princes from the Kings of Macedon, to those of Spain and France, have been found in general hostile to neighbouring republics. The numbers, the wealth, and the power of the Icelanders, tempting the ambition of the King of Norway, at the same time that they excited his envy, that Monarch determined to subdue them by arts and by arms. He caressed the leading men in Iceland; invited them to his Court, and by presents, offices, and honours, endeavoured to se-
cure

cure them in his interest, and attach them to his person.

The republican virtue of Iceland, somewhat relaxed by the common effects of commerce, and a commercial spirit, yielded, but not without a struggle, to the machinations and the might of a powerful Monarch.

The whole island was divided into two parties : the one under the influence of the Norwegian ; the other jealous of his power. Intestine divisions were followed, in 1240, by civil wars ; and in 1263 the government of Iceland was transferred, by a voluntary surrender, to the Crown of Norway.

LETTER VII.

Historical Anecdotes of Denmark---The first Expedition of the Cimbri against the Romans---Laplanders, the most ancient Inhabitants of Sweden and Norway---Odin, the ancient God of the Scandinavians---His remarkable Death---The Origin of the cruel Wars waged among the Goths, or ancient Danes and Swedes themselves, after Odin's Death---Conquest of England by the Danes.

Zealand, October, 1788.

I AM not treading here upon classic, or upon holy ground, but I am treading upon the tombs of heroes: the very dust of my shoes has possibly pointed the spear of Canute.

While I wander along the sea shore, and hear the bustle of men, I think I see Frotho and his followers embarking for Britain: their spears and bucklers thunder in
my

my ears. And here before me is the palace of Hamlet—"Angels and Ministers of Grace defend me!" These inconsiderable islets gave conquerors to England, who long ruled our ancestors with a rod of iron. The Briton sowed, and did every drudgery, while my lazy Lord Dane, or, as we have it now, lazy Lurdane, ate, drank, and slept.*

The history of Denmark, and of the countries bordering upon the Baltic, is the most interesting of any that the world presents. The first peopling of Scandinavia, as we now understand that name, was,

* The very learned Professor Thorkelyn, of the University of Copenhagen, an Icelandic Gentleman, who is well known and highly esteemed in Great Britain, and to whom principally I am indebted for the account I have given of Iceland, was so obliging as to draw up for this publication a list of words of the same import in the Norse or Icelandic, and the language at this day spoken in the Lowlands of Scotland, and the northern counties of England. A manuscript copy of those laws has been left by Dr. Thorkelyn with a literary friend in London, who, it is said, has some thoughts of translating and publishing them, with notes historical and philosophical, in English.

was, no doubt, from the Scythian stock settled in Germany, after they had made an unsuccessful attempt to obtain abodes in more inviting climates.

About one hundred years before the Christian æra, those swarms, crushing against one another, pushed forwards into Gaul and Italy, to procure more room. Their success in the former, encouraged the Savages to attack the latter, and Rome itself; and had not Marius defeated them, at a time their force was divided, the long glories of immortal Rome would have been cut shorter than what they were, by the same race of barbarians. Failing in this expedition, the Scythians remaining in Germany were deterred from attempting another to the south. The arrival of a new host from Tartary, under the famous Odin, however, obliged many to look out to some other quarter, and they went over into Sweden and Norway, driving the inhabitants, who naturally opposed their entrance into a country where there was only sufficient maintenance for themselves, into Lapland.

Lapland. The cold dreary deserts of Lapland, as well as the sword of the new enemy, would soon thin those ancient emigrants from the same country with their invaders.

Odin established his dominion over Norway, Finland, Sweden, Denmark, and part of Germany. Some writers say, that Odin and his followers were driven out of Scythia by Pompey, at a time when the Romans were penetrating to every corner of the east and west, enslaving Greece at one extremity of the world, and Britain at the other; raising up a great monument of human ambition for the Goths to pull down. Their incursions into Tartary was a fatal error; they stirred up a nest of hornets, to sting themselves to death.

Whatever motives or circumstances brought Odin into Scandinavia, he fostered the flame of vengeance which he brought with his army, or found among the Scythians in Germany, against the Roman name:

F

he

he swore them, after the example of Hamilcar, to be eternal foes to the Romans; and from the date of his arrival, to the second attack upon the Roman Empire, the Scythians were employed in whetting their lances. Odin, the more to strike into their minds the dreadful engagement, and to confirm their idea of his divine origin, which had already been propagated; perceiving too his end drawing near, and unwilling to leave the stage like a common mortal; resolved to die in the character of a God. It was only necessary to die an uncommon death---his subjects were not judges of what was becoming or unbecoming in the actions of a Deity, so it was connected with something daring. He called around him an assembly of the people, and after exhorting them to behave upon every occasion with bravery and resolution, and to revenge every disgrace which had or might happen to them, an inherent principle in all northern nations, he bade them a solemn farewell, telling them, that he was going back again into Scythia, to take his seat among the Gods.

Odin

Odin then drew his sword, and plunged it into his bosom, continuing to wound himself with it, until he fell lifeless at their feet.

Odin divided his kingdoms among his sons, giving to one Denmark, to a second Norway, and to a third Sweden: the last, the regal seat of Odin, was long esteemed the paramount state; and at an annual meeting of the three Kings, his Danish Majesty held the bridle of the King of Sweden's horse, and the King of Norway the stirrup, while he mounted. The Kings of Denmark found afterwards means to kick the Swedish Sovereign out of the stirrup; and this division of these dominions laid the foundations of the cruel wars long waged, not only between Sweden and Denmark, but betwixt the Princes of each particular nation: Odin's example having been copied by their fathers, in dividing their kingdoms among their sons. The success of the Northerns against the Roman Empire fired all Scandinavia with a spirit of

emigration, and we find in particular with relation to Denmark, her Frothos, her Haralds, her Swains, and her Canutes, invading Britain, and subduing the prior invaders from Germany.

This race of Danish Kings in Britain ended in Hardy Canute; and the German line again got possession of the Crown of England.

The Danes withdrew to their islands in the Baltic; and their Monarchs were forced to be satisfied with their native realms; yet as England was not the only spot where the Danes planted their standards, we were a second time conquered by them, in the person of William of Normandy.

LETTER VIII.

Anecdotes of the Kings and Queens of Denmark---of the famous Margareth---of Eric---of his Queen, Philippa, Daughter of Henry IV. of England---Character of the Modern Danes---The Conquests of the Goths retarded the Cause of Freedom in Europe---Prince Royal of Denmark---Manners and Customs of the Modern Danes.

Zealand, Oct. 1788.

MY Lord Moleſworth, and ſome other writers who have treated of the Danes, ſeem to agree, that they poſſeſs no great ſhare of intellect. If this be the caſe, it proves that wit is not requiſite in the compoſition of a warrior, as no country is more famous than Denmark for producing heroes.

Odin's kingdom of Scandinavia has been, from his time, a nursery of foldiers, who rehearsed at home, upon each other, what they acted abroad in their various expeditions; and when they could no longer plunder foreign nations, they disputed about the rocks and bogs of the north. They would seem to have pitched upon this country, as it produced iron in abundance, for the manufacture of spears, bucklers, and fabres.

“ Every nation,” says Mr. Wraxall, “ has produced her heroes and her patriots, on whom history delights to dwell: some countries are, however, more fruitful in great and sublime spirits than others: in Denmark they have had few to grace their annals.” This traveller allows that Christian IV. and Frederic IV. were sublime spirits; and if this is granted, I am at a loss to name a King of Denmark, from Canute to the age of Frederick IV. who was not a sublime spirit: they were in general great statesmen and

and conquerors. Their Queens, too, were equally famous for their abilities. Like all other celebrated statesmen and warriors, they plunged their country into deep distress. There are few Princes who deserve, or even who would value the compliment paid by Mr. Mallet to Christian I.---“ He was one of those who do not
 “ attract the admiration of mankind, yet
 “ whom Providence never bestows upon a
 “ nation, but as a signal mark of its fa-
 “ vour.”

Of all the Sovereigns of Denmark, Margareth is the most remarkable; her history, like that of Sterne's hero, begins before her birth. Waldemar III. her father, jealous of his Queen, Hedwige, confined his consort in the Castle of Seaborg. This King, in one of his hunting parties, put up for the night at Seaborg, but without any intention of seeing his Queen. One of the Queen's maids attracted the notice of Waldemar: she was desired to repair to the Monarch's bed-chamber, at a silent
 F 4 hour.

hour. This girl, proud of her conquest, boasted of it in secret to her female friend, who, no doubt, piqued at a preference given to another before herself, ran to her royal mistress, and told the story. Hedwige prevailed with her handmaid to give up the place, and purchased with gold the embraces of her husband. Waldemar begot Margareth, in spite of himself, and united, by this night's work, the three kingdoms of Denmark, Sweden, and Norway. This is the only proof of the virtues of a northern talisman, which has as yet appeared. The Danes show the picture of this Sovereign as of a Deity.

Eric, Margareth's successor, married Philippa, daughter of Henry IV. of England. This warlike Monarch, Eric, fled from his capital, at a time it was besieged by the Swedes. Philippa took upon herself the command of the Danish garrison, and conducted the defence of the city in so brave a manner, that the enemy were obliged to retreat. At another period, in
the

the absence of Eric, Philippa sent a fleet against the Swedes, who had at this time shook off the yoke of Denmark. She was not so fortunate in this enterprise, and probably because the fleet was not commanded by this Queen in person. Eric, though he could not defend his kingdom, could beat his Queen, and upon his return, revenged the disgrace of his arms, by cruelly using her, so as to occasion her death.

It is to be regretted, that this Princess did not exercise her courage in bestowing a drubbing upon that dastard: we would have called such chastisement with the fists, with the same propriety as an ancient drubbing of oratory, her Philippics.

Denmark has been equally unfortunate to the daughters as to the sons of Britons.

In speaking of the character of the modern Danes, it is necessary to consider their ancient and present situation, to prevent
drawing

drawing an unjust likeness from a figure of which little more than the skeleton remains. They were formerly free;—they are now slaves. That nation which first pulled down Roman tyranny, and spread the flame of liberty throughout Europe, now behold every other European nation free, or attempting to be free; while they, driven back into their northern provinces, are again deprived of the natural as well as the political sun. That flame was as suddenly extinguished, as it was raised. The Goths do not deserve the high compliments paid them by most writers. They made war upon, and drove before them, free nations, as well as slaves: and perhaps their conquests retarded the liberties of Europe. They set the example of lawless plunder, of murder, rebellion, and anarchy, rather than of real freedom.--- The Goths did not originally plant the love of freedom in the minds of men; and had we received originally, as we did latterly, our laws from the examples of Greece and Rome, we should now have been

been equally free, and without that mixture of Gothic barbarism, which still pervades our customs and statutes. Rome had tyrants, and stabbed them: other tyrants would have fallen sacrifices to liberty, without the interference of the Goths; and the Roman empire would have naturally fallen in pieces, or into separate kingdoms, in like manner as those which had preceded it; and from the same causes, tyranny, and an over-grown extent of power, and luxury.

These are the diseases of which the political bodies of great empires die. Nations who have never known liberty, fit easy and contented in their chains, until the progress of arts and sciences among them inspire feelings, inconsistent with the dignity of Monarchs, but consistent with the dignity of men. The modern Danes have not forgot their former name; and the recollection occasions swollen pride, or, as frequently, despondency, as the various tempers of men may receive
the

the impressiion. Some writers, therefore, describe them as a proud ; and others as a spiritless, tame, and abject people.

The revolution which took place in the reign of Frederic III. made no alteration in favour of the Danes ; they only transferred their liberties from the Nobility to the Sovereign. The present Prince Royal of Denmark is the patron of Liberty, and from the steps he has already taken, it may be hoped, that the subjects will not only experience that temporary relief which a mild reign gives, under the most despotic Governments, but that the foundations of good government, and rational freedom, will be laid during his administration. The Danes, in their persons, do not much differ from other European nations. They are distinguishable chiefly by their fair hair. Several of the Scandinavian Monarchs have been surnamed by the whiteness of their locks. The coldness of the northern climate, I apprehend, occasions this distinguishing mark, since we find that

that the brute creation here change their darker-coloured Summer robes, to white, in Winter.

A drunken Dane, is proverbial ; but this may be applied, with equal justice, to all nations of the Danish stock, the English, the Scots, the Norwegians, and Swedes. The ancient God of those nations recommended full cups, and his example has been devoutly followed. When reason partly resumed her seat, and when this earthly Deity was considered only as a piece of antiquity, to be admired, not worshipped, the ingenious northerners found out an apology in their skies. The dress of the men is after the German fashion. The ordinary women, when they are habited in their Sunday cloaths, appear exceedingly awkward. Their finery is put off to the best, or to the worst advantage, with starch and beads ; they seem to be inclosed in a coat of mail.

The Danes, like the Norwegians, are fond of dancing to the music of the violin. Bands
of

of itinerant German musicians supply them with other sorts of harmonies. The great people, in all countries, have now nearly the same customs: in speaking, therefore, of the manners of foreign nations, I draw my observations from among the middling and lower classes, among whom alone is to be found a national character. The Danes are not the most cleanly in their persons and houses; and this may be owing as much to the use of stoves, as to their poverty. The cold Winter makes them exclude the fresh air, in too great a degree, from their apartments; and their stoves keep them too warm: and what must appear very ridiculous to strangers, many of them, even during their hot Summer, wear great-coats, &c. Indeed both Swedes and Norwegians have this custom, notwithstanding the latter affect, in some instances, to hold cold at defiance: probably this other custom is by way of bidding an equal defiance to heat. The Danish ladies are not remarkable for their beauty. It must be from the Saxon females

males that the most considerable part of our fair countrywomen inherit their charms. The higher classes of the English, and the lower ranks of the Scotch women, are, no doubt, of Danish extraction, if we may judge from a parity of ugliness.

The Danish houses are generally built of timber. Their flat islands have few rocks, and it is only their cities which have a proportion of brick houses; each house has a kind of piazza before it, where the family often sit in Summer, and the landlord smokes his pipe. The Norwegians, notwithstanding their country is almost wholly composed of rock, still persist in building their houses of timber, which, they say, are warmer than those of stone. But this is of small moment, seeing that the stoves will keep either kind equally hot. The frequent destructive fires, in every quarter, should teach them the impropriety and danger of this obstinacy. Even their Princes are generally burnt out once a year, from one or other of their palaces,

palaces, and whole towns are consumed in the same blaze. The Danish Watchmen, as they go their rounds at bed-time, address a prayer to the Almighty, to preserve the city from fire, and warn the inhabitants to be careful in extinguishing their candles and lights.

LETTER IX.

Voyage from Elfineur to Riga---First Battle between the Swedes and Danes---Anecdotes of the King of Sweden---Causes of the National Jealousies subsisting between Russia and Sweden---Bornholm---Earthholm, the Gibraltar of Denmark---Why the Baltic is more dangerous than other Seas---Storm in the Baltic---Sea Scene---Character of the common Seamen---Coast of Courland.

Baltic Sea, Oct. 1788.

THE ship in which I came passenger to Elfineur left me there, and proceeded upon her voyage to Prussia: my route is for Riga, in Livonia. I embarked on board a small vessel, loaded to the water's edge: there was no other at the Sound, and the season approaches when there will be none.

G

I once

I once more, as we passed the grounds, beheld the City of Copenhagen.

There were lying in the roads several ships of the line, Danish and Russian.—One of the Russian men of war sailed from the bay; the Danish ships saluted her; their thunder echoed to the coasts of Sweden—a prelude to the bloody scenes that threaten Scandinavia.

The Danes and Swedes have already had an engagement near Gottenburg: the first, as allies of Russia. The Danes were much superior in number, and easily obtained the victory.

The King of Sweden is arrived at Gottenburg, where he found every thing in the greatest confusion, and no preparation made for repelling an army of twelve thousand foes, at the gates. Gustavus summoned the Burghers and Officers in the town around him. He addressed them in a very pathetic speech, and urged them to
their.

their duty. " I know," said the King, " that there are traitors in my service : I desire that they may retire. I intreat that none, but such as are willing to save their country, may carry a sword in its defence ! " Troops are daily coming into Gottenburg from every quarter ; and within the few days Gustavus has been there, the state of matters is amazingly altered. The presence of royalty makes treason hide its head.

Elfsineur is crowded with troops—the drum and fife sound in every corner. It is but lately that the King of Sweden dined with his Danish Majesty, in Copenhagen, *en famille*. Gustavus, without ceremony, journeyed to this city, arrived at his Ambassador's house, and requested to be directly introduced at Court. The Ambassador represented the impropriety of the hour, as Christian would be then at dinner. Gustavus resolved, nevertheless, to take pot-luck, and went with the Plenipotentiary to the palace. Christian was

cutting up a chicken, when the Ambassador's name was announced ; and the first intimation he had of his royal guest, was his appearance in his dining-room.

Alas ! with what ease can Sovereigns forget their social moments, and return again to their false dignity, and treacherous policy !

The Princes of the House of Holstein wear the three northern Crowns : they are nearly related to one another, and yet, these dearly beloved cousins seldom come together, but by the ears.

Odin's domains are still divided among brothers ; and these brothers still divided against themselves.

Livonia, Ingria, and Carelia, now Russian provinces, are hard of digestion to the Swedish Monarch ; and the revolt of Sweden is not remembered, without a grudge, by Denmark.

But

But these two last-mentioned kingdoms really cannot afford to be jealous of each other, and were it but for the sake of economy, they should shake hands.

We are now in sight of the Island of Mona: the Island of Zealand, with her cities and woods, have sunk in the ocean behind us. Leaving Mona, whose white sides give an idea of Albion, we proceed on our voyage.

The coast of Sweden appears upon our left hand, and the islands of Denmark are now wholly out of sight. I hear the Baltic roaring a-head of the vessel: we are just entering this noisy sea. The night closes around us; we shall, however, have the moon at ten or eleven o'clock. The weather is moderate, and the winds favourable. The moon trembles over the waves, and paints a beautiful light and shade. Ships of different nations pass and repass ours: we sail very heavily; the Captain's avarice has made him forget the season of the year, and overload his bark.

Bornholm appeared in the morning, upon our right hand: the north point is high land, where I can see, with the ship's glass, the remains of a fortrefs. Bornholm is not encumbered with woods: it is pleasantly variegated with corn fields and farm houses; and some fishing towns adorn the shores.

The fishing-boats come off to every vessel going to, and coming from the Baltic, supplying them with fish. The fishermen generally bring, besides, hens, ducks, and other poultry; taking in return either money or brandy.

In my voyage hither, several years ago, the Captain of the ship threw out a signal for the fishers to bring us provisions: a dreadful storm of wind, thunder, and lightning, suddenly came on, while the fishing-boats were along-side, disposing of their commodities. The Danes prayed to be taken on board, and the tackles being fastened to their little galleons, we hoisted them

them altogether upon deck. Within a few miles of Bornholm is a small cluster of islands, called Eartholm, not exceeding one English mile in circumference. Here is an excellent harbour, capable of receiving ships of the line. Eartholm, a cluster of fortified rocks, is the fortress of Bornholm, and, in those seas, the Gibraltar of Denmark. Both these are detached from the other Danish islands, from fifty to seventy miles. Next to Zealand and Funen, Bornholm is the most considerable and fertile.

The porpusses are playing about our ship: the seamen portend a hurricane—nor are they often mistaken in their prognostications. Like the Asiatics, who dwell upon the tops of their houses, and have the heavens and earth always before their eyes, they are better acquainted with the secrets of Nature, than those who are mostly within doors, and under cover.

We are steering our course for the Island of Gothland, which the charts instruct us

to make, before we stand over towards the Gulph of Livonia. Next day the winds increased, yet with hazy weather: we could not see Gothland, and were obliged to take an uncertain departure for Windaw, a town upon the coast of Courland, which is to serve as a beacon for our further procedure. Thus, we must carefully pick our road from one part to another. The Baltic does not admit of a direct course to the harbour we are bound for, as many rocks and shoals, and small islands, lie in the way. The shallowness of this sea creates other dangers. In the wide Atlantic and Pacific Oceans, the depth of the sea, and the extensive field it rolls upon, occasions a long wave, and of consequence a slow motion, and gradual ascent to the top, be the height ever so great: on the contrary, a shallow sea cannot give birth to such a wave; it makes them short; and hence a quick or boiling motion, which gives the Baltic waves a more perpendicular shape, evidently more dangerous than the form of the waves in the Indian oceans.

To

To this circumstance, I mean the form of the waves, next to Providence, I would attribute the preservation of several crews of British ships who have taken to their boats in the Atlantic and Pacific Ocean. Sure I am that no open boat could long be prevented from foundering in a storm, in the Baltic. You may have some idea of this great lake, in a high wind, by looking at the boiling water in a cauldron.

Neither the Captain nor Mate had ever been at Riga, so I took upon me again to dictate. The ship was going at a great rate before the hurricane, and we expected to see the Courland shore next morning. I advised to lay the ship to the wind, both to insure our safety at sea, and to prevent us from running ashore in the night. A heavy-laden vessel scudding before a storm, and in a rough short sea, is a situation dreaded by every seaman. I could hear the men asking one another, if they thought the ship would make fair weather of it? expressing thereby their apprehensions of foundering.

foundering. The main deck was almost constantly under water, so that only the bows and stern appeared to swim, and the raging sea, behind, threatened often to poop the vessel, that seemed as if struggling to preserve herself amidst the furious elements ! The Captain did not think proper to lay the ship to, that is, with her head to the sea and wind, for several hours from the time I had desired him. When it was done, she lay very snug and easy under her reefed main-sail.

Being now under no apprehensions, I looked about with more coolness upon the surrounding scenes. The watery clouds intercepted the sun's rays, and rolled swiftly along the firmament ; apparently rising from the ocean at one side of the horizon, and plunging again into it at the opposite point on the other. One solitary vessel lay at some distance, tossing like our own upon the floods ; the waves dashing, in a sheet of foam, against her sides.

The

The mariners, now that the rudder is made fast to leeward, and nothing to do, are kindling a fire, to warm their broth; one of them even ventures to hum "The wandering Sailor!" but none dare to whistle, at such a time as this, upon any account. The boldest British tar would tremble to hear, at this moment, a single note of any wind instrument. I imagine that their superstition, respecting whistling in a storm, arises from the idea, that to whistle at the same time with the winds of heaven, is mocking Providence, who guides the tempest. Except when immediate danger is before their eyes, the common sailor has no fears, because he has little or no knowledge of navigation. They never know where they are, but when informed by their Officers. Our crew just know of themselves that they are in the Baltic, but not one of them, except the Master and Mate, could navigate the ship to a single port of the Baltic. Charts, quadrants, and other directories, are all Greek to them, and to ninety-nine of a hundred among
all

all the ordinary seamen of every nation. It is fortunate, or perhaps unfortunate, that common sailors and soldiers are ignorant of the dangers into which they are led. A common seaman looks, without much agitation, upon the frowning skies; but the least dark spot upon the countenance of his Commander, makes him dread shipwreck and death.

I never think of laying in stores for the voyage, preferring to take my chance, and to learn the way that others live. Unluckily, the Captain had not thought of laying in any thing more than I did; and we are almost starving. I am gnawing a biscuit which is covered with maggots: the little beef we have is rotten—yet the sailors are slicing it down with onions, making a hotch-potch of it, such as it is. I am fortunately born a traveller; that is, I can live upon bread and salt, though not the best of their kinds; I can lie upon straw, or even upon a deal board; and exist almost as long as a camel without water: I can carry,

ry, too, a heavy burden of disappointments, and look up at heaven without murmuring.

The night draws her curtain, and, notwithstanding the moon shows her edge above the atmosphere, the gloomy clouds intervene, and involve us in darkness visible. The raging winds and seas, and the rattling shrouds, make a dreadful concert—an oratorio of elements! The moon, in her first quarter, soon left us. I never think of going to bed when there is a lee shore within fifty miles. I am sitting in the cabin, with a sputtering taper before me. There is no fire nor fire-place, and the weather is exceedingly cold. The vessel is driving slowly towards Courland.

About five o'clock in the morning, the Mate awaked the Master, and told him, that by the sounding he judged the ship to be very near the coast. All hands were instantly summoned upon deck; the sails were loosened from the yards, and
we

we stood off shore, until day-light discovered our situation. We then saw the coast about three miles distant, and we were opposite to a part of it distinguished by the name of the Baker's Ovens, to the south-west of Windaw, a small sea-port town. We steered along shore northwards, for Domešnes, the north point of Courland, at the entrance of the Gulph of Livonia. A Dutch vessel, our companion in this voyage, was very serviceable to us: we followed her through the intricate passage to Domešnes. The Courland shore here has some dangerous reefs, and, upon the other hand, the island of Osoel, with its sand-banks: betwixt these is the channel to the Bay of Riga.

The day and the wind just served us to reach the entrance of this gulph, the ancient Sinus Livonicus; the two light-houses directed us to avoid the reef of Domešnes. When the lights are seen in one line together, and appear as a single light, it marks that the vessel is abreast of the shoals,

shoals, and thereby directs her future course. I have taken drawings of the coast, from the Baker's Ovens to Domesnes, with the different bearings and distances. This shore is generally flat, and covered with woods. A sand-bank runs along the whole coast. When we passed the Baker's Ovens, which are detached hillocks, very remarkable in so level a country, the spires of Windaw soon appeared, as if floating in the sea, with the forests around them.

We are this evening becalmed, nearly opposite to the light-houses. The lights are trembling upon the water, and illuminating our ship's sides. Good night.

LETTER X.

Gulph of Livonia---Of the Construction of the Northern Vessels---The Norwegian Women equally well skilled in Sea Affairs with their Husbands---Dreadful Storm near Riga---A Shipwreck---Narrative of the distressed situation of the Ship in which the Author was---Arrival at Riga.

Riga, Oct. 1788.

IN the morning of Friday last, we proceeded from Domesnes, on our voyage up the gulph to this harbour, with a gentle breeze, and fine clear weather. The Courland shore, bounding the gulph to the south, is, like the coast we had passed, flat and sandy. The woods, which universally hedge those countries from the ocean, apparently

parently float upon it. The various openings in the forests have the appearance of rivers and small bays, the low sandy coast, even at an inconsiderable distance, being sunk beneath the watery horizon. On the subsiding of the waters, after the flood, we beheld the earth! The birds alighted upon the masts to rest their feet, tired with their airy expedition from the opposite shores. This day was the most delightful we had enjoyed; the winds favourable, and the bay covered with vessels displaying the colours of various nations. It is a custom at sea, when one seaman recognises a ship commanded by his acquaintance, to hoist his colours, which are soon noticed by the other, and the compliment returned.

A number of lug-sail-boats passed us, steering for the island of Osoel, to which they belonged. These boats are constantly employed in carrying the produce of this island to the Riga market. They are all open boats, to render them more convenient for rowing; and they keep near the

H shore,

shore, to prevent their being caught in the open gulph by a storm. Sometimes, however, the temerity of the crews makes them venture too far, and the consequences are generally fatal. The Norwegians are the most ingenious of all people, in the construction of their boats, which are the best calculated for safety in the world, and with which they venture out to sea, for the purpose of piloting ships into harbour, in the greatest tempests. I have seen even the women steering these boats, amidst the raging wind and sea, with the utmost composure and skill. They come off with their husbands, and having left them on board the ships for pilots, the wives take charge of the boats, and carry them home. It is true, that many of the Norwegians yearly lose their lives in their boats, and it is only surprising that any escape. They are rewarded accordingly; and receive, in cases of much danger, from fifty to one and two hundred pounds, for conducting a valuable ship into port.

The

The Norwégian yawls are built long and broad; the bow and the stern are of the same shape; and their sides, gradually spreading out, and rising from the keel to the gunwell, serve to throw off the violence of the waves: to escape, rather than to resist them. The shape of the stern and bows has the same effect: their breadth, terminating in a gradual point, cuts and throws the sea from the boat. The waves, in rising behind or before a vessel, always take the direction which the form of her sides, her stern, or bows may give: if these turn towards the decks, the waves will come on board; and on the contrary, the construction before noticed returns them again into the ocean. But if the stern is flat, or what is termed a square stern, it resists the waves, which, besides the dangerous shock, occasions them to poop the vessel; particularly if the square stern is of a perpendicular shape, and not sloping outwards from the lower part; or, in seamen's language, if it has not a great rake. The nearer the largest ships resemble a

Norwegian boat, the safer they are. They sail the best, carry the largest burdens, and upon the smallest draught of water.

The spires of Riga appeared about mid-day, towering above the sand-banks and woods ; but as we approached, they sunk behind them ; which gave birth to a very learned dispute between the Captain and me, about the laws of perspective.—Our ship was close in with the harbour at six o'clock in the evening, and we made the signal for the pilots to come off. Another English ship and the Dutch vessel did the same. No pilot, however, came to conduct us through the channel off the bar, which lies in the mouth of the river Dwina.

The evening was exceedingly pleasant. The firmament glowed with the beams of the setting sun. The wind was favourable, yet we dared not to venture over the bar, being entirely ignorant of the proper channel. Nor did the other ships attempt
it

it any more than we, but prepared, under a snug sail, to await the morning. We followed their example, and hoisting our lights, to prevent running foul of each other in the dark, stood off and on with the vessel during the night.

At four o'clock in the morning the wind increased to a brisk gale, accompanied with snow showers. At six o'clock it blew very hard, and the snow showers thickened. We stood in for the land, to discover our situation. The day just began to break. The seamen were looking out a-head, and about seven o'clock one of them called out, that he saw the shore, within a quarter of a mile's distance, upon the weather bow; and the shower clearing up a little, we saw the waves dashing against the beach. We instantly wore ship, but we were almost close upon the beach, before our vessel fetched any way. Judging that we were to the northward of the Dwina, the Captain thought proper to steer for this river, as if he had forgot the bar at its mouth.

We soon perceived the masts of vessels lying in the Dwina, but at the same time found ourselves so near the bar, upon which the sea was rolling in white sheets of foam, that, unable to clear it, we were forced to let go both anchors in the open roads, to prevent striking. Then it was that we all wished that we had run the vessel ashore upon the main-land, where we might have had a chance of saving our lives.

This sad alternative was not now in our power. The storm blew directly upon the bar, and the breakers, within half a cable's length, foaming in all their terrors. We saw the English ship drive ashore, and beating against it, her sails flying in pieces. The storm grew more violent, and at last to a most dreadful hurricane. The crew sheltered themselves in the steerage; none would venture upon the deck, as the sea was breaking over us, and we expected every moment to founder. I had only courage to look from the door of the
cabin :

cabin : the ocean seemed to collect itself into one wave, to roll us into eternity ! The seamen were deaf to the repeated orders of the Captain, to go upon deck. They said, they had no prospect of saving themselves, but with the wreck ; and that were they to go upon deck, they could not escape being washed overboard,

The waves flying over the bows, rushed into the steerage and cabin, threatening to drown us as we sat endeavouring to keep ourselves from being overturned by the rolling of the ship ; the vessel at one instant standing almost perpendicular upon her bows, and at the other upon her stern. One of the mariners at last went to see if the ship was driving, at the earnest entreaty of the Captain, who was rendered stupid with the fear of losing his property, as he had made no insurance. The sailor informed us that the anchors were coming home ; the vessel was driving among the breakers ! Good God ! was then fervently exclaimed by every one. The broad axe

was called for, and all hands ran upon deck to assist in cutting the cables, to set what sail we could, and to run the vessel on shore wherever it happened. The Master, with the ablest of the sailors, took charge of the helm. The ship, when the cables were cut, swung round, and we plunged among the raging breakers—a throw for life or death! We were running under bare poles, the sail which the seamen had unbent, being shattered in a thousand pieces. The moment we entered among the breakers, boiling in sheets of white foam, I expected instant annihilation. My fears fled: despair succeeded: and I beheld the awful scene with composure. The ship, at times, was wholly buried in the spray: the shrieks of the younger seamen could just be heard amidst the fury of the hurricane. The snow-showers darkened the heavens: we did not know where we were---the tempest was our only pilot. Every mariner was giving his advice in guiding the ship, and looking out anxiously for the flags, and other marks;

marks ; and I, among the rest, went forward to the bows. The rolling of the ship tossed me nearly into the sea : I was dashed against the windlass, and rendered speechless.

I was awaked, as from a dream, with the joyful shout that our lives were saved ! One of the buoys was discovered, which showed that we were sailing in the proper channel. Our activity redoubled with hope, and we soon got into the mouth of the river Dwina, to which we were fortunately opposite when we drove from our anchors. The crews of the vessels in the harbour held up their hands, as we passed them, in admiration of our escape : they had seen our situation, and had given us up for lost. The very guard-ship in the river was driven upon the banks, and had hoisted a signal of distress.

We were obliged, after all, to run our ship aground, having neither anchors nor cables. Several boats, from British merchantmen

chantmen, came to our assistance, and enabled us to get into safe moorings.

The custom-house officers came on board, and, humanely forgetting what at another time would have been their duty, joined our countrymen in thanking God for our deliverance, and left us to take some repose.

LETTER XI.

*Of the River Dwina---Desert Appearance
of the Country around---Description of Ri-
ga---Anecdotes of the History of Livonia
---Ancient Commerce of Russia---Origin
of the Russian European Commerce---The
Author carries the first Intelligence to
Russia of the Hostilities between the Swedes
and Danes---Critical Situation of the
Russian Frontiers----Anecdotes of Count
Vietinghoff---Of Count Brown, the Gover-
nor of Riga---Origin of the Connection of
Russia with England---The Decline of its
Indian Commerce---Correspondence between
the Russian and British Sovereigns---Scots
Emigrants to Russia, after the Murder of
Charles I.---These advise the Conquest of
the Provinces upon the Baltic, from the
Swedes---A New Character of Charles*
XII.

XII. of Sweden---Patriotic Plans of the Great Men in Russia.

Riga, Oct. 1788.

I NEED not inform you that this city is the capital of Livonia. It is situated upon the river Dwina, about three miles from its mouth.

The banks of the Dwina, and the country upon each side for ten, and even for twenty miles from the sea, are nothing but sandy plains, covered with barren trees and brush-wood. At the entrance of the Dwina is the fortress of Bulderow, and a small town of wooden houses, chiefly inhabited by work people employed in the merchants yards, the pilots, and inn-keepers. Here lie the large ships to take in their cargoes; other smaller craft proceed up the river, to the different wharfs nearer Riga. The valuable articles of hemp, flax, tar, tallow, hides, grain, tobacco, &c. &c. are brought in barks from the various provinces and kingdoms

kingdoms bordering upon the Dwina, which sweep into the merchants warehouses the wealth of this extensive empire.

There are a number of ships still in the river, whose bosom, in Summer, is covered with a forest of masts, cheering the dead prospects around. These are the charms of commerce, the enchantments of industry and trade!

I embarked on board a small cart, I have not yet forgot my sea terms, for the metropolis of Livonia. Our way is through a desert: in many places not a single tree or bush is to be seen—a continued waving field of sand. The spires of Riga direct our course, and as we approach nearer, a few trees and houses show some signs of earth and life.

We arrived in the suburbs, situated upon the south banks of the river, and joined to the city, upon the north banks, by a floating bridge of rafts. The walls of Riga are washed

washed in some parts by the Dwina, which is its best defence to the south ; and towards the land it is strongly fortified.

Riga must be considered as a fortress, and a commercial town : in any other view it contains nothing worthy of remark. The first idea that strikes one upon entering this city, is, that the houses, as well as the inhabitants, had crowded within the walls for protection. The streets are narrow and dirty; the houses, a few excepted, are old, and of a mean appearance. The spires and churches alone retain an air of ancient magnificence.

Livonia, as a part of Scandinavia, was long a bone of contest between the Russians, Swedes, and Danes, who have, in their turn, covered the Baltic shores with blood, and approved themselves the genuine sons of Odin. The valuable provinces of Carelia, Ingria, Esthonia, and Livonia, bordering upon the Gulph of Finland, are now quietly established under the first of
those

those powers, and serve as wharfs for shipping the productions of her world of dominions behind them: and in order to secure these wharfs, for which Russia has to thank the misfortunes of Charles XII. of Sweden, Peter I. built a new capital city at the mouth of the Neva.

The inland commerce of Russia with India was now no more. Moscow and Kiow, the ancient capitals, no longer sparkled with the gold and jewels of Indostan. Peter looked around him at home to supply the defect. He saw the materials for commerce, but he had not a single port by which he could send them to foreign nations. Archangel lay too near the Pole. A very inconsiderable commerce only could have been carried on with a harbour frozen up nine months in the year. In the contest for the maritime provinces, Riga is celebrated for her brave defence, which procured a very honourable capitulation. Her religion, her municipal and commercial laws and privileges were secured. The in-

inhabitants likewise stipulated, that no Russian trader should dwell within the city. The only cause to which I can attribute this request, is, that there was actually no room for strangers. The Russians have therefore built a wooden village in the neighbourhood, which would, no doubt, prove another Trojan horse, were it not for the reasons just mentioned.

I had not yet rested my feet upon Russian ground, when an Officer from the Governor waited upon me, to know what intelligence there was from Denmark. I informed this gentleman of the skirmish near Gottenburg, betwixt the Swedes and Danes, and an express was instantly sent off to the Court of Petersburg with the news. Until the naval victory of the Russian fleet, commanded by Admiral Greig, over the Swedish navy, the inhabitants of Riga and Revel, as well as Petersburg, were apprehensive of an attack. It was the very best policy in the Russian Government, while these cities were defenceless,

to

to divert the Swedish forces towards Got-
tenburg.

Russia certainly did not expect the bold assault from Gustavus: but that hero, luckily for the Russian Empire, who had her hands filled in other quarters, either mismanaged his affairs, or was betrayed by his Officers. I have no idea that the Swedes could have conquered the Russian provinces upon the Baltic; but they might have laid them under contribution: they might have destroyed one or more of their cities, and among these Petersburg.

The Swedes must have soon retired before the superior force of Russia, which, when collected, is equal to repel every invader: yet the disgrace and loss, even of temporary conquest, would have been a bitter cup for Russia. This narrow escape will in future caution the Russian Government against leaving their capital and their frontiers without troops to defend them: the anxiety and hurry just now distinguish-

able in drawing an army to the Baltic shores, is a proof that they are sensible of the danger they incurred by their former neglect.

Riga is not a large town. I think the inhabitants are calculated at twelve thousand; four-fifths of whom are Germans; the remainder, English, Swedes, French, and other nations. The suburbs contain nearly as many more inhabitants, and their number daily increases with Russians, in search of commerce. It is the resort too, in Winter, of the Livonian Nobles and gentlemen, and at this season there is a very genteel and agreeable society. Count Vietinghoff has built a handsome theatre and assembly-rooms, at his own expence: he is the patron, too, of the rural arts, and has several extensive farms, for the improvement of agriculture. This Nobleman is deservedly beloved by all, and in high estimation with her Imperial Majesty, in whose Councils he holds an exalted rank.

Count

Count Brown, an Irishman, Governor-General of Riga, Revel, and Narva, and of the provinces of Esthonia and Livonia, entered, at a very early period, into the Russian service, in which he has now turned grey. The Count has undergone every hardship of war. Upwards of fifty years ago, in the war with Turkey, he was taken prisoner, and sold among the Turks for a slave. He was redeemed at the interference of the French Ambassador at the Ottoman Court. Catherine II. at her accession to the Throne, found many Britons in both her army and navy: she continued to them the favour and distinction which they had uniformly received, from the reign of Alexis Michaelowitz, father of Peter the Great, and placed them in the most important stations. Russia, prior to the reign of Alexis, had little intercourse with the rest of Europe; indeed it was then, almost entirely, an Asiatic State. Novogorod, an inland city, and not far distant from Riga, upon the frontiers of the Moscovite empire, rose, from its peculiarly happy situation,

tuation, and in spite of the ignorance of despotism, at an early period, to be ranked among the Hanse-towns. It was the medium, not only of the Russian, but of the Indian commerce. Its wealth and greatness were proverbial—"Nought can be greater than God and Novogorod!"

To this mart merchants came in crowds from every corner of Europe. The revolutions, occasioned by the contests of the Russian Princes who disputed for empire, as well as the discovery of the passage to India by the Cape of Good Hope, overturned Novogorod; and the conquest of Carelia, Ingria, and Livonia, in the present century, by the Russians, completed its destruction, by affording more convenient commercial towns at the mouths of the Neva, and the Dwina.

Archangel, lying upon the White Sea, had long before belonged to Russia. It was only a mean fishing village, and, hemmed in by the frozen North Sea, seemed to forbid

bid every attempt to hold a commercial intercourse with foreign nations. The Russians, without any knowledge of navigation, never thought of Archangel. In the reign of Elizabeth of England, and of John II. of Russia, a small squadron was fitted out by the English Government, under the command of Commodore Willoughby, to make discoveries to the north. The Commodore's ship, with every person on board perished in those inclement latitudes: one only of the squadron, after combating with dreadful storms, was driven by chance into the Bay of Archangel. The Russians considered those new comers as the natives of another world. Intelligence soon reached the Czar John, at Moscow, who gave orders to have the Officers conveyed to him, that he might examine in person from what part of the earth or ocean they had come.

Captain Chancellor, the Master, had with him the commission of his Sovereign, written in different languages. The Czar

was soon satisfied; and, from conversations which passed between the Czar and the English, by the assistance of foreigners at Moscow, the idea of commencing a correspondence directly with England first struck the Russian nation. Archangel was yearly, from this date, frequented by English ships and merchants. John corresponded, by letters, with our Sovereigns; and, anxious to encourage this first dawn of foreign trade, which had never before been carried on directly by the Russians, granted uncommon privileges to his new allies.

The foreign merchants or agents at Novgorod, which still kept up its head, jealous of this new channel of commerce, did every thing in their power to dissuade the Emperor from showing such countenance to the English, without effect. Archangel increased in trade and wealth. The Russians, proud of this new opening, crowded to Archangel with their commodities; and the English chose to bring the Russian produce

produce from this port, however dangerous the navigation, rather than submit to pay the higher prices put upon them by the factors at Novogorod, and other Hanse-towns, who monopolized the Russian, as well as most other trades. Thus, the first dawn of our connection with Russia daily spreading, both nations sensible of its importance, with equal alertness and willingness entered into treaties of friendship. England found in Russia a connection which rapidly bore her up to a superiority over the Hanse-towns, who were not only great in trade, but in naval power.—Russia afforded the most favourite articles to Britons—the materials for rendering their navy formidable to all the world! Alexis, the successor of Ivan, and father of Peter I. continued that friendly intercourse begun by Elizabeth and Ivan II. Charles I. corresponded with Alexis: this familiar intercourse gave rise to a sincere personal attachment, so seldom found among Kings! After the murder of the unfortunate Charles, a number of Scots

emigrated to Russia; and hence a number of Scottish surnames are found among the higher ranks of the Russians, at this day. These refugees entered chiefly into the army, and greatly contributed, by their knowledge both of commercial and military affairs, to the aggrandizement of the empire that had afforded them an asylum. It is probable that they gave Alexis the first idea of asserting his claims to the provinces upon the Baltic. It is not to be supposed, that a nation just beginning a direct intercourse with foreigners, could have a just idea of what steps were necessary to increase their commerce. Besides, the difficulty to be surmounted in conquering such valuable provinces from the Swedes, possessing a well-disciplined army, and a strong fleet---provinces upon whose safety the very existence of Sweden depended, could not be surmounted, even in idea, but by some persons whose knowledge of the blessings of commerce, and the happy situation of these countries, saw that every thing ought to be hazarded by Russia,

in

in procuring what alone could render her a maritime and trading power. Russia had often before had these provinces lying at her mercy; but a want of this knowledge of commerce, made her indifferent about the dominion over lands, in no way so fruitful as the vast regions they already possessed.

Even Peter the Great had little knowledge of those machines which make commerce move, and support it. He must have had this matter clearly explained to him, before he ventured his life and his crown in so hazardous an undertaking, in which he had not only to conquer the regular forces of an ancient and brave nation, with a mob of peasantry, but to conquer, too, a still more formidable barrier, the aversion of savage minds to civilization and trade. Peter led on a rabble, unwilling to fight, against an army of Charles XII. of Sweden, the greatest hero that ever lived---against an army flushed with recent victory over their most inveterate and
powerful

powerful enemies, the Danes---an army trembling with contempt at the Russian Emperor's attack, and who drove before them 50,000 Moscovites with 5,000 Swedish troops, at the first onset! Charles XII. committed one fault, which lost him all his fame, and the best part of his kingdom. He despised his enemies, and exposed himself, upon every occasion, to fight under every disadvantage. He had several foes to contend with, whose armies, separately, were more numerous than his. He imprudently divided his army, to oppose them separately, and at a great distance from each other. The consequences which happened were naturally to be expected. Charles XII. had he kept his brave Swedes together, would have gained all the victories he did gain, and without being himself at last defeated: he would have preserved his kingdom, and made posterity venerate his name! One false step ruined him; and the world, which for ever judges by the success of enterprise, and deem misfortune invariably the effect of

of folly or of madness, have consigned his memory to pity, or to derision, either of which must be equally galling to his mighty shade! Peter I. built his new capital upon the ruins of Sweden. No wonder that the Swedes continue to behold, with the keenest anguish, the decided superiority attained by Russia, erected upon such foundations.

In the year 1769, Count Brown was ordered to procure from England a number of naval officers, for the Russian fleet then fitting out for an expedition to the Mediterranean. Among those engaged by the Count was Lieutenant Greig, the present Admiral in Chief, and Governor of Cronstadt, the Portsmouth of Russia. The Count still boasts of his celebrated recruit, and records, at his table, the burning of the Turkish navy, atchieved by this son in war. The Count is a very plain man, attentive and ardent in the duties of his office, notwithstanding the advanced period of his life; fond of his countrymen,
in-

including English and Scots, as well as Irish, with all of whom he associates as much as his duties will permit. The British Tars, who are not the most punctual in paying that respect which is rigorously demanded by Military Governments, sometimes commit mistakes, and are brought before the Count's tribunal. An English Shipmaster had entered the Dwina in a storm, and run his ship up to Riga, without taking any notice of the Russian fortrefs of Bulderow. He was taken before the Governor, to answer for this neglect. The Count being disposed to think it had proceeded from ignorance, asked the Shipmaster, if ever he had been in Riga before? No. Did you see nothing in your passage up the Dwina, which seemed to require a mark of respect, by lowering your top-fails, and hoisting your flag, as you must have been accustomed to do in passing the the Sound?——Don Quixote mistook an inn for a castle; and Voltaire complained, that many of his visitors mistook his castle for an inn. The honest
 Captain

Captain fell into another blunder, of another kind, and conceived the Imperial fortrefs of Bulderow, with its earthen ramparts, and centry-boxes, to be a church, a church-yard, and tomb-stones ! The Count, in a violent fit of laughter, was hardly able to pronounce the pardon of the Shipmaster, unskilled in scarps and counter-scarps. It would appear, that the great men in Russia are all farmers : his Excellency Count Brown cultivates his own estates in Livonia, and he has taken charge, too, of Admiral Greig's, lately presented to him by her Imperial Majesty, as a reward for the Admiral's gallant conduct in the recent victory over the Swedes.

Catherine II. does not only measure out an ell of ribbon to her Knights, but measures out to them, besides, a mile, a league, or even a degree of latitude of acres. The scale of her bounty is magnificent as that of her empire.

LETTER XII.

*Of the Russians---Of the Germans, the Beauty
of their Women---Masquerade at Riga---
Of the German Music---Customs and Man-
ners of the Germans---Of the River Dwina
and Harbour of Riga.*

Riga, October, 1788.

WHEREVER I travel, my first inquiries relate to the customs, manners, and amusements of the people, by which alone their real characters are to be estimated. Man, driven by necessity, rather than by choice, to divers professions of life, cannot be fairly drawn while covered with those masques: but in his amusements he is naked, and a good painter has then no difficulty in delineating his figure.

Accustomed to the manners of the Danes, I do not find so much novelty here as I expected.

expected. Indeed, this is the third time I have rested my feet upon the great continent of Europe, and taken a peep of the natives. I do not consider myself as yet arrived in Russia: Riga is chiefly inhabited by Germans. The Russians will be quite a new people to me; as much so as if they were inhabitants of the other world: in dress, in figure, in language and religion, they entirely differ from all the other European nations. I can see a few of them in the streets, walking about in their sheep skins and long beards. They are strangers in this new corner of their empire. They are only beginning to pitch their tents upon the shores of the Baltic. Peter I. drove them out of their woods, to breathe the sea air upon the coasts of the Finland and Livonian Gulphs. My ears, which will never bear the German, are at once reconciled to the softness of the Russian language. The speaker of this seems to depend much upon his arms, to convey his full meaning. A Russian, while conversing, tosses about his hands like a field preacher.

A fo-

A foreigner, in order not to be prejudiced at first sight against the Moscovites, must possess a considerable degree of apathy, or at least of patience. Their dress is uncouth, their manners awkward, if not barbarous; and every third person you meet is drunk. I will not therefore give way to first impressions: have patience with me until I have resided for some time in Russia, and I promise a faithful portrait of the children of Peter, for whose sake I am disposed to think the best of them. Virgil has put me already to the expence of purchasing a fur cloak. His description of a Scythian Winter, at the first fall of snow, sent me to a furrier's shop. The Rigans are putting in their double windows, and brushing up the skins of the Wolf and Sable. The Germans are generally described as a grave, phlegmatic people; but reversing the order of animal nature, they revive in the cold season of the year. The Livonian gentry are now in town, and the assemblage of beauty and elegance is far beyond what I expected to meet

meet with here. Perhaps there is no town in Europe of its size that contains so many handsome women as Riga. I noticed, however, with regret, that rouge formed a component part of their beauty. The Germans are fond of pomp, and there are few among them who do not live fully to the extent of their incomes. I have been at the first masquerade ball given this Winter. I went in the morning to procure a ticket;—"but you must have two," said the retailer of these pleasure permits, "or you cannot sup." To eat, is a principal part of a German, as well as of an English entertainment; so this *but* cost me another dollar. My eagerness to see a polite assembly under the Pole, brought me an hour too soon: this, however, gave me an opportunity of surveying the company as they entered—those who came to laugh, or to be laughed at. The great people, as usual, played at cards; and the jocund and gay danced, and went about distributing their jests among the sober Dominos. Nuns and wanton Widows, Old

K

Maids

Maids and Coquettes, Harlequins, Dutch Skippers, and Ballad Singers.—There goes a Polander, followed by a Prussian, a Moscovite, and an Austrian, at all of whom he squints, with a watchful eye. There is a smart Russian Girl, playing at hazard with a couple of Turks. There is one attempting to be a Wit, and another to act the Fool: surely wit and madness are nearly allied, for one cannot tell which is which, in these two candidates. Here is a Fortune-teller; a Young Beau, with a long beard—O, *fortunate puer!* he has got hold of the hand of the prettiest girl in the assembly: I do not well understand German; he certainly tells her to be virtuous, and that every good thing will follow of course. An Old Man totters upon the brink of the grave. Is age—is death a proper subject of ridicule? Let us jest with the frailty of mortals, yet spare mortality itself! When the first subject is exhausted, we shall then permit Yorick's skull to be held up, for the amusement of the humane company.

From

From the prevailing disposition to ridicule folly, one would imagine the world to be advancing, at a great rate, in wisdom and virtue. Never was there an age in which folly and vice were more sharply inspected, or more wittily ridiculed. But, alas! while every man carries before him the budget of his neighbour's follies, none has the penetration or the courage to present his own. Hence, the dullness of masquerade, as well as the greater part of dramatic performances. What dramatists, and what mimics, if they would only caricature their own defects or extravagancies!

The signal for supper is thrown out from the gallery---transparent letters inform the company, that those who have tickets for the first course, may file off to the right. I am seated betwixt Diana and the Venus de Medicis: "Grace was in all their steps,"---I had seen them dance---"Heaven in their eyes,"---I had seen them ogling: yes, my dear Sir, Diana almost killed a strong German with a side glance;

he reeled, and in reeling he trod upon my toes. I forgot to help myself, and the Waiter passed me: the point of my shoe, just at that moment, rubbed against Venus's slipper. This served for the first dish---and had such accidents happened every course, I should have supped, like Sancho Pancho in his government house. The German music enchants me. It would be imprudent in the most rigid Platonist to dance at a German ball, where the eye and the ear are both so ravished, where such sweet sounds from the orchestra give new pleasure to the sight of lovely females, and both to thought. There were present at this masquerade some of the first ranks; and stars and ribbons, the masques of a Court, were sported in different corners of the rooms.

The public assemblies are frequent, and conducted by an association of the gentlemen of Riga. But in every private house throughout Germany there is, during the continuance of ice and snow, a dance, or a concert, three or four times a week.---

Every

Every German, male and female, can perform upon some musical instrument or other : and wherever they meet, they instinctively look around them in search of a violin, a flute, or a piano forte. The master of the feast, if there be any stranger in his house, makes him an offer of his best violin, and is thunderstruck if the guest is ignorant of *fa, la, mi*. A German is seldom without a fiddle or a pipe in his hand. He hastes from busy scenes to his family at home, undresses, and wrapping himself up in his night-cap and night-gown, seizes his pipe, and sits down, like a demi-god, in a cloud of his own raising. If he is again called out, it is with evident chagrin that he parts with his tobacco and slippers: he is, at this time, uncommonly slow in his motions ; but when he returns to his chamber, his wig and coat are off in a twinkling, and his night-cap resumed. With all this, he is very polite, and the night-cap is pulled off to every visitor. But the visitor sometimes does not perceive this mark of civility, as the night-cap is frequently hid

in the smoke. An universal civility, indeed, especially to the ladies, whom no gentleman passes, known or unknown, without saluting them, prevails throughout the whole of this country.

The Winter approaches fast. The northern firmament is in a state of confusion. While I rest in bed, I hear the storm, and commiserate the situation of mariners. Several British ships are yet in the river, taking in cargoes of timber, flax, and hemp, for London and other ports. The river Dwina affords a safe and noble harbour for shipping; but, like most other rivers, it has a dangerous bar at its mouth; and its banks, formed entirely of loose sand, are supported, near Riga, by a sort of basket-work of brush-wood: there is no proper foundation for building stone piers—the current would soon undermine every such erection. With all these inconveniences, Riga is, in commerce and in wealth, the first port of the Baltic.

LETTER XIII.

*Death of Admiral Greig---Anecdotes of this
great man.*

Riga, Oct. 1788.

I AM the most unfortunate being existing! This morning an express arrived from Revel, with an account of the death of Admiral Greig. I had heard of his recovery from a late illness only two days ago. This sad intelligence has struck a damp in every heart. My hopes are now blasted. I will post to Revel instantly, to pay the last duty to the memory of this hero.

The Admiral had undergone great fatigue in expediting the fleet from Cronstadt: he saw every thing done himself, and attended often from four in the morn-

ing till ten o'clock at night. He was seized with a putrid fever, on board, soon after the engagement with the Swedes, but upon no account would he quit his station, and go on shore. He has died a willing victim in the service of Russia. In the first battle, many of his Captains deserted him: he did not know whom to trust, and he kept himself the command, until death tore him from it. Adieu.

LETTER XIV.

*Journey along the Coast of the Gulph of Livonia---Desert Appearance of the Country
---Manner of Travelling---Manner of
Crossing the Rivers, which are without
Bridges or Boats---Post-houses.*

Livonia, Nov. 1788.

I LEFT Riga two days ago. After driving over a sandy desert, I arrived in sight of the first post-house, pleasantly situated upon the banks of a small river. The postilion applied his horn to his mouth, and gave notice to the Postmaster of our approach to the borders of his dominions: we could not advance further, until the wooden raft was sent for us and our cavalry. We landed safe, and the Postmaster and his wife very kindly invited me to dine with them. The Livonian woods begin
now

now to spread around, and skirt the shores of the gulph, along which the road lies towards Revel. Were the trees in the forests longer, I should imagine myself in the wilds of South America ; but their diminutive size reminds me of their vicinity to the Artic Circle. I am wandering along the dreary coast of the Baltic : the night closes around me, and I hear distinctly the roaring surge.

The post-horn again sounds a charge, and informs me that my lodgings are at hand. The Postmaster is surpris'd when he hears my intention of staying until the morning ; for it is the custom of travellers, in these countries, to go on day and night. Alas ! I shall be at Revel too late, let me haste ever so much. In the morning I proceeded : the vehicle broke down in a lonely part of the wood, where no assistance was to be had : I therefore trudged away upon foot, leaving the postillion to do his best with the crazy machine. Indeed it is shameful that better ones are not kept by
the

the Postmasters: the expence of building them cannot be great---they consist entirely of timber, and even the wheels are not bound with iron. The post-waggon from Riga overtook us. My postillion described our disaster, and endeavoured to prevail with the stubborn German to take me with him. "No---the post could not be stopped a moment: the business of the nation was not to be impeded by the mishaps of vagrant travellers:"---if they had not money, I suppose he meant to have added; for no sooner had a silver ruble displayed its charms in the sun beams, than your humble servant obtained permission to seat himself beside a man in office. At the next post-house, of Alt Salis, I procured a machine, a kind of plank resting upon four wheels, called a trofky; and, having drank my coffee, I continued my journey; the Postmaster shaking his head at the temerity of an Anglelander, as the Germans call us, driving through Russian woods in November, unattended, and ignorant of the language. Travelling through these countries,

countries, at this season, the frost not yet having set in, is extremely disagreeable. There are no roads that deserve the name:—I am dragged about, from post-house to post-house, amidst the dirt, and bespattered by every coach-horse that passes me. We had not drove three versts, when I beheld my friend the Postman in distress---his waggon broke down, and his letter-bags scattered about. He came up to my vehicle, in which, without ceremony, he seated himself. Was it the spread eagle upon his breast, or the recollection of similar obligations, that gave him this air of conscious worth? Be that as it may, I had the honour of conveying, at my expence, her Imperial Majesty's Officer to the next post of Sea Salis.

There are no bridges over the rivers in Livonia: the passengers are carried over on small rafts of trees, which are pulled from one side to the other, by means of a rope fixed to poles stuck in the banks. I left Sea Salis, and again entered the forests.

I pro-

I procured a kabitka, a kind of covered waggon, which was no small luxury, as it began, towards evening, to rain. We drove along the shore a part of this stage: the solemn murmur of the surge, after the late gales---the hoarse cawing of the rooks---the lowing of cattle---the echo of the woods, footherd melancholy and reflection. A Livonian villager tended her cows near the beach; she was seated under a thick branching tree, and sung, to cheer the dull hours.

Night draws her curtain. I am hurried through the forests: the lights, darting from the cottages among the trees, direct our way. The rooks proclaim a storm. I sit down, in a sorrowful mood, at the post-house, to write to you. There is nothing but a bench in the room, for the weary traveller to rest himself; and the inhabitant looks as if he were deprived of it by my arrival: he little knows, that were it a bed of flowers, it could not hush my soul to sleep. These shores are almost
un-

uninhabitable: here is nothing seen but forests or sandy wastes. The accounts given of Livonia by travellers must be fabulous, or else the inland parts must be of a very different soil from that which I have seen. I have opened my stores to the people of the house---they are all bowing to me: they offered to me some brown crust and milk, in exchange for my brandy, which I have accepted.

LETTER XV.

Journey to and arrival at Pernaw, a fortified Town---Army of Charles XII.---Siege of Narva and Riga---Trade of Pernaw---Anecdote of the only Briton who resides at Pernaw---The Livonian Peasantry---The Province of Esthonia---State of Cultivation.

Esthonia, Nov. 1788.

I LEFT my humble lodgings early in the morning. The road still continues through sands and woods. I find nothing like cultivation from Riga to Pernaw, a few spots excepted, and hardly worth excepting.---The wretched huts, and even those thinly strewn, seem but an additional shelter to beasts. The post-houses alone indicate that human beings exist. In all this journey, too, I saw but one wild animal, a
kind

kind of deer, which started from its seat, and bounded into the woodlands. I was happy to find near the shore a small neat dwelling, with offices, painted red : it is possible even here to live comfortably, and any where, when cleanliness is combined with good taste. A garden spread itself behind, not five acres, yet large enough to supply the family with greens and other roots. Indeed, five acres of cleared ground would be an immense tract in those regions : where the bleating of flocks is as seldom heard as the chirping scythe.

As we approach Pernaw, the eye is refreshed with the sight of an open plain ; and the Gulph of Livonia washes the surrounding landscape.

Pernaw is situated upon the river of the same name, where it enters the gulph. It is strongly fortified. Charles XII. in the war with Peter I. landed his army of twenty thousand men here, and marched from Pernaw to Narva with about five thousand,
with

with which he surprised and defeated the Russian army, consisting of near fifty thousand troops, but men unskilled in the art of war. Riga was at the same time besieged by a Polish army, commanded by the Duke of Courland. Charles had a more violent struggle in raising this siege than that of Narva; but he succeeded in driving the Poles before him.

Charles, flushed with victory, and dreading no danger from flying enemies, left a very inconsiderable number of forces to protect Livonia, which was soon overrun with Russian troops. The Swedes were defeated in their turn by the Russians, and Narva and other places taken from them.

Riga, Pernaw, Revel, and Narva, are at no great distance from each other, and compose the chief barriers of the Russian Empire, upon this side. Pernaw is a very small town, and has not much commerce. The river is very inconsiderable, its course being confined to the pro-

L

vince

vince which gives it birth. The exports of Pernaw are consequently limited to the produce of Livonia.

I observed several Dutch ships, Lubeckers and others, in the harbour, loading corn, flax, and timber. Very few British ships come here; and but one Briton resides within the walls of the town.

Mr. Addison somewhere observes, that if an inhabitant of this globe should meet a son of earth in the moon, he would consider him as his countryman, and forget ceremony in the introduction. I ran directly to the house of my friend: it was a new world where there were only two Britons! This gentleman has been only eleven months from England, and in Pernaw, yet speaks the German language fluently, and without having had the assistance of a master. I wondered at his proficiency: he said it was no way strange, for he had not conversed with an Englishman since he arrived, and was *obliged to*
talk

talk German ! This will serve in the place of ten chapters upon education, and the most expeditious methods of learning foreign languages. I drank my coffee with the Anglo-German, and proceeded upon my journey. My pass-port was demanded a second time, as I left the garrison. No person can take an airing through Russia *sans ordre de la Imperatrice*, in which is inserted his name, profession, and titles.

The raft which carried me across the river Pernaw was sunk under water, by the number of Livonian peasants, and their carts, who crowded upon it. These are a poor looking people, cloathed in the coarsest manner. I had not before heard the language spoken : it is not at all pleasing to the ear.

The river Pernaw is the boundary between the Desert and Paradise. When I arrived upon the north side, I entered a finely cultivated country. I now quitted the shores of the Livonian Gulph, and jour-

neyed through the inland parts of the province of Esthonia, which lead to Revel, situated upon the opposite shore of the Gulph of Finland; Esthonia forming an isthmus between them. The Postmasters are all Germans, and very civil, if travellers are so to them: but as their office is deemed by themselves of great importance and dignity, they expect a return of good manners. In journeying through Esthonia, the eye is agreeably relieved with alternate landscapes of cultivation and farm-houses, of woodlands and rivers. But the country is uniformly level: a dead silence reigns: no roaring cataract from a mountain's brow; the water sleeps in its even channel. This province has evidently been gained from the sea. The month of November is not the season to judge of a country by its appearance; especially a country bordering the frozen ocean. The land, however, seems deserving of more careful husbandmen. Rural cultivators here do not attend to the formation of inclosures, which might be made of the stones which encumber the ground, in the same manner

manner as in certain counties in England, as well as Scotland.* I noticed, that the farmer, in many instances, ploughed around the stones, rather than be at the trouble of removing them.

There are few gentlemen's seats to be seen; and these consist of a wooden, or partly brick building of one story. The farm-houses are numerous, and are all mean looking huts of wood.

The roads are, owing to the late rains, very bad. I travel slowly, yet I am not impatient. I see every traveller in the same kind of waggon with mine, dragged by northern ponies through the mire. The peasants assist their horses in extricating the wheels of their carriages, every instant buried in mud, and ill calculated for such roads, being made very low. The post-houses are situated at about twelve miles distance from each other, and each has a room appropriated for the reception of tra-

L 3

vellers,

* See Captain Newte's Tour, p. 25, justly celebrated as the most pleasing, as well as philosophical Tour in Britain, yet known.

vellers, gratis. Here, the weary wanderer, in cold weather, places his back against the stove, lights his pipe, unties his wallet, and refreshes himself with bread and cheese.

Every traveller carries his provisions, from the Prince in gold lace to the Boor in straw shoes. The post-houses do not afford much accommodation, as it is not required: few travellers stop, but for horses. After a tedious day's journey to a post-house within a few stages of Revel, crossing rivulets swelled with the rains, twice overturned in the mire, and other circumstances of such voyages, I am at last under cover. There is only one bed-room and one bed in the house: if there were two beds, I should cheerfully give up the one next the fire to the landlady: the landlord is from home: what is to be done? Why, I have given a glass of brandy to the landlady. It is excellent: she has accepted of another. You see the treaty is on the carpet; but don't mistake me. A treaty was concluded; and I had the bed and room to myself.

LETTER XVI.

The City of Revel---The Russian Fleet---The magnificent Funeral of Admiral Sir Samuel Greig, Commander in Chief of the Russian Navy---Funeral Oration spoken by Lieut. Colonel Baron Pablen, translated from the German---Particular Account of the Procession from the Admiralty to the Cathedral ---Epitaph upon Admiral Greig.

Revel Nov. 1788.

THIS morning ushered in Winter. I wrapped myself in my furs, and continued my route. The country varies little in its appearance, from Pernaw to Revel. In the last stage, near the shore of the Finland Gulph, it is covered with wood. As we pass through this wood the spires of the city appear, and, arriving at its extremity,

we descend into a valley, where part of Revel is built, and part upon a hill, at the head of a small bay, or inlet of the gulph. A melancholy gloom hung around the city. The Russian fleet lay in the harbour, unrigged, and its great Commander no more.

In a few days after my arrival, the remains of Admiral Greig were laid in state in the Admiralty-house, and the public admitted to pay their last respects to his memory. I had procured admittance early. My limbs trembled as I entered the hall, which was lined with black. The body was placed upon a bed of state, dressed in Admirals' uniforms, and having a crown of laurel upon its head. The Admiral's staff, and six orders of knighthood conferred upon him by her Imperial Majesty, were spread upon tabourets, covered with white satin, and fringed with gold. The Admiral's flags were placed at the head of the bed of state, and an escutcheon, with the titles of the deceased. The coffin,

fin, superbly decorated, rested upon a silver frame at the side. The silver urn, containing the bowels of this great man, stood at the foot of the bed, with this simple inscription, " S. G. Nat. D. 30th Nov. 1735, obit D. 15th Oct. 1788. The wax tapers, from candlesticks of massy silver, threw a flame of light over this awful magnificence! British and Russian naval Officers guarded the hall; and the grenadiers, the house and passages leading to it. At the hour appointed for the interment, the Governor of Revel, General Wrangel, attended by all the Officers, naval and military, and by the noblemen and gentlemen of the province, assembled at the Admiralty. Lieutenant-Colonel Baron Pahlen made a speech to this august assemblage, in honour of the deceased Admiral, to the following effect:

" Respected Sirs,

" Our entry into this world, and our exit, are events we know of certainly; but
the

the space between life and the grave is of uncertain circumstance and date !

“ Happy that man who continually fills this period with brave and worthy actions, and leaves behind him a train of glory.--- Miserable those, even in death, whose memory can only be traced by a dark cloud of vices !

“ The ashes of the good and great cannot be too highly revered---they are the relicts of sublime spirits, which another age may not again produce. Behold that urn ! it contains such relicts as I describe : an age would be too short a space to record his virtues, for we must for ever dwell in praise of honour and of worth like his. His noble deeds, his heroism, adorned with prudence and reflection ; his unwearied diligence in the most important commands entrusted to him by our Imperial Sovereign---equally a proof of the discernment of our august Monarch, and of the Admiral's merit. He inspired the many thousands

sands who fought under his banner with the same sentiments of heroism ; and seeing him at their head, they knew no fear.

“ He taught us to conquer our enemies, and something more---he taught us to unite religion with the maxims of war.

“ Against the armed foes of the realm he fought as a Lion : but no sooner are they defeated, than all his native mildness returns.

“ He avoids appearing as a conqueror. His words, as the voice of an Angel, still vibrate in my ear. ‘ The chance of war,’ said he to an illustrious prisoner, ‘ happens to all : take your sword again---the brave should never be without one, who use it in defence of their country !’ He continued watching, to the last hour, for our interest and safety, and could be dragged from his post but by death. Heaven called him away ; and we struggled with that Heaven, to keep him on earth ! Respected

spected Sirs ! beloved Brethren and Fellow Soldiers, who have come at this awful moment to join our tears together ! we have fought and conquered with him---led on to victory, by his conduct, our guiding star to glory ! O ! let his example teach us to wear the laurel with the same dignity he did himself !

“ Greatest of Sovereigns, the worthy dead had reaped every earthly fame in your service, nor would he have quitted it, but to obtain an eternal crown of glory in heaven !”

At a signal given, the ships of war in the roads began to fire minute guns, which they continued to do, from the moving to the conclusion of the funeral procession. The streets, from the Admiralty-house, where it commenced, to the Cathedral, were lined with troops : a squadron of horse led the procession. The dragoons, with standards lowered, preceded by solemn

lemn music, and at intervals the drums of the army, muffled with black crape, added their warlike base. The Imperial grenadiers followed, with arms reversed. The boys of the public schools, two and two, dressed in mourning, came next, singing hymns; then followed the clergy, in their habiliments; a herald; General Lehman, of the Artillery, with his two Marshals; Military and Naval Officers, who had served under Admiral Greig, carrying the tabourets, with the staff and ensigns of the five orders of his nobility; the three flags, and the sacred urn!

The body, on a funeral bier, drawn by six horses from the Governor's menage, covered with black cloth, and led by six bombardiers, and the domestics of the deceased. Twelve Captains of the Navy, Russian and British Officers, among whom were Captains Elphinston and Trevenen, attended by their cockswains as porters; Major-General Wrangel, Governor of Revel;

vel ; the Staff and other Officers of the
 State Major, two and two ; the different
 Officers of Government, according to their
 rank ; the Nobility and principal Citizens ;
 two Marshals, with their staves, and a
 company of infantry, arms and colours
 lowered, closed the procession. The Ca-
 thedral was lighted with innumerable wax
 candles. The cavalry guarded the entrance.
 The body was placed before the altar, and
 near the tomb, within the church ; and
 the orders, staff, and flags around them.
 After a funeral oration, by the German
 Bishop, the body was deposited in the
 tomb : a signal gave notice of this, and
 instantly the ships of war, the cannon of
 the ramparts, and all the troops, fired a
 triple discharge, rending the air, and strik-
 every heart with awful melancholy ! Si-
 lence resumed her reign. I walked in the
 cathedral, and contemplated of honour
 and of fame. I sat down upon the hard
 bosom of the grave, [and taking out my
 pencil, I wrote upon the stone an epitaph :

If Great and Good Actions
Command the Respect of Mankind,
The name of Greig will live for Ever.
He deserved good Fortune,
And he found it under the Banners of Cath. II.
He scattered the Enemies of Russia.
Fortunate, even in Death,
Like Wolfe, like Epaminondas,
He died a Conqueror.
CATHERINE
Bestowed upon him every Earthly Honour—
His own Actions,
Immortality !

LETTER XVII.

Of the War with Turkey---- Unfortunate Campaign of the Emperor Joseph II--- Reasons why the Russians appear slow in their movements--- Naval Campaign in the Baltic between the Russians and Swedes, 1788--- Naval Engagement between Admiral Greig and the Duke of Sudermania ---The Empress of Russia's Letter to Admiral Greig---The King of Sweden deserted by his Officers---The Interference of Great Britain and Prussia in his favour.

Revel, Nov. 1788.

EARLY this year, her Imperial Majesty, on the breaking out of the present Turkish war, ordered Admiral Greig to prepare a fleet for the Mediterranean. Nothing was less expected by the Admiral, than such an expedition; nor had the Russian Government

vernment an idea that the Turk would have been so bold as to be the first in throwing the gauntlet. Prince Potemkin and Count Romainzoff are placed at the head of the Russian armies, as Admiral Greig was appointed to the chief command of the fleet. The Russian armies are soon collected : near 150,000 men are already acting in different quarters. But the Turks commenced hostilities before the Russians began to recruit. The Emperor of Germany, as the Ally of Russia, has, several months ago, begun the campaign, with 80,000 troops. The Emperor has as yet been unfortunate, considering the number and discipline of his forces. He began the attack without waiting for the assistance of the principal in the dispute : he received the whole brunt of the Turkish army, which, together with the diseases among his troops, has reduced them to half of their original number, in a very short period.

The Russian army seems to be carefully watching an opportunity to repair these

M

mis-

misfortunes, and we may soon expect to hear of a decisive engagement; which would have taken place before this time, had not the Turks hitherto avoided a general battle; and this accounts for the apparent inactivity of the Russians. This is a new system of Turkish tactics: they used formerly to come on in hundreds of thousands, and decide at once for victory or death! This alteration may be attributed to the foreign Officers in their service, who, being unable to discipline this unruly mob, have at least gained a point of consequence, in preventing the extreme hazard of committing the whole fortune of the war to a single throw. Their repeated attacks in different small squadrons, though frequently repulsed, have the same effect as rallying, and have at last penetrated into the very center of the German legions. The Russians, therefore, must not give the Ottomans any opportunity of making such Tartarian manœuvres. They must besiege the Turkish cities, which will bring the Ottoman armies together, to defend them.

them. The Moscovites have learned to stand the first charge of their furious enemies, and success must attend superior discipline.

Admiral Greig, before he set sail, had to overcome many difficulties. The whole Russian empire did not afford seamen sufficient to man ten ships of the line; and it was necessary to have twenty, or more, with attendant frigates, and other vessels. The usual source was shut up: Britain had forbid her seamen to enter into foreign service: Holland followed the example—nor would these allied maritime powers suffer even transport ships to be employed in the service of any foreign nation. To add to this difficulty, Spain seemed inclined to oppose the passage of the Russian fleet into the Mediterranean. France, unable, in a civil fever, to assist her old friend the Turk, had, perhaps, prevailed with Spain to step forward. To complete the scene, Sweden, seeing every maritime nation unfavourable to Russia, concluded that the

present was a favourable conjuncture for striking a blow at her powerful rival.--- The encouragements which invited Sweden to action, at this crisis, were great; and the advantages to be obtained, substantial. The ancient alliance between Sweden and the Porte might be easily renewed, and a subsidy obtained for occasioning a diversion of the arms of Russia. Swedish provinces might be recovered, and the Czarina obliged to desist from interfering in the affairs of Sweden.

Catherine II. was not dismayed by all these circumstances united. The peasantry were crowded into the ships, and the Admiral made the best distribution among these, that he could, of seamen. The Russian fleet, consisting of seventeen sail of the line, departed from Cronstadt in July last. The Swedish fleet, consisting of fifteen sail of the line, under the command of the Duke of Sudermania, were cruising, at the same time, in the Gulph of Finland. The two fleets soon met each other, with
the

the same determination, of deciding the sovereignty of the Baltic. The Swedes imagined that their ships, filled with veteran sailors, would be an over-match for the Russian ships, tho' greater in number and in strength, manned as they were, only with the peasants. Many of the Russian ships had not one hundred seamen on board, to mix with seven or eight hundred landsmen. Numbers of their best sailors had been drawn to the Black Sea, for their fleets in those remote parts; for Government trusted that they would be able to supply their place with foreign recruits.

The Duke of Sudermania, despising opponents lately the inhabitants of woods, or scorning to take any advantage, gave battle to the Russian Admiral, in a situation every way favourable to the latter. Admiral Greig had much need of such advantage, deserted as he was by five of his finest ships. It is a fact, that twelve Russian ships of war sustained the whole weight of the Swedish fire: but these be-

haved so nobly, for their country's honour and their own, that, notwithstanding the now decided superiority of the Swedes in ships and seamen, both fleets were equally tired of the contest. Unless the Royal Duke knew that these five ships were to desert, he acted imprudently by engaging the Russians in a calm, when both navies lay as batteries to each other ; when little seamanship was required, and when the superiority of his enemy was so great in the weight of metal, and number of men.--- He could not be ignorant that the Russians, whether seamen or landsmen, were equal in courage to the Swedes, and that they would fight their guns to the last man. The Duke affects, in his letter to King Gustavus, to say that he kept the field of battle, and that the Russians retired in the night, otherwise he would have renewed the attack in the morning. But how does this accord with his declaration immediately afterwards, that many of his ships had no powder left, and that they could not be supplied ?

The

The Duke of Sudermania behaved, in this engagement, with much gallantry; and his retiring before a superior force, when he had little ammunition left, was no way dishonourable, and surely less foolish than it would have been to have pointed his harmless cannon at the smoking muzzles of the Russian guns. Admiral Greig, as soon as he had repaired the damage of his rigging, dispatched a small squadron, under the command of Captain Trevenen, who attacked the Swedish fleet in harbour, and burnt a ship of the line, taking and destroying some smaller vessels. Trevenen swepted the seas of every Swedish ship that appeared; and a number of transports, conveying provisions and other stores to Finland, were taken.

Admiral Greig wrote her Imperial Majesty an account of this naval fight, and he received the following answer from his august Sovereign, written with her Majesty's own hand:

“ To the Worthy and Brave, &c. &c.

“ We should be wanting in that grati-
 “ tude and politeness which ought ever to
 “ distinguish Sovereigns, did not we, with
 “ the utmost speed, convey to you, and
 “ our other brave and gallant Officers and
 “ seamen of our fleet, who have proved
 “ themselves worthy of their country, our
 “ approbation of your exemplary conduct;
 “ and the obligations which we owe you
 “ for your intrepid conduct in your en-
 “ gagement with our enemy, the fleet of
 “ the Swedish King. To the constant ex-
 “ ertion of your abilities, and your zeal
 “ for the glory of the common cause of
 “ ourselves and the whole Russian Empire,
 “ may, under God, be attributed the very
 “ signal victory you have gained; and we
 “ have not the smallest doubt, but that
 “ every part of our dominions, where this
 “ event shall be transmitted, will behold it
 “ in its proper point of view. It is with
 “ grief we read the record of those pol-
 “ troons, who, unable to catch fire from
 “ the

“ the spirited exertions of their fellow-
 “ warriors, have so signalized themselves
 “ in the annals of treasonable cowards,
 “ and to whose cowardice the Swede has
 “ to boast that any ship of their fleet es-
 “ caped, when so encountered; and the
 “ more particularly, that their High Ad-
 “ miral escaped, when twice so nearly in
 “ their power to have taken him. As we
 “ assume to ourselves the sole power to
 “ reward the meritorious, we shall take
 “ signal care for the very exemplary pu-
 “ nishment of the guilty. We beg, there-
 “ fore, that you will yourself accept our
 “ heartiest acknowledgment; and we trou-
 “ ble you to communicate the same to our
 “ worthy and animated Officers and sea-
 “ men.

“ It is our command that the delinquents
 “ mentioned in your official letters, be im-
 “ mediately brought to Cronstadt, to wait
 “ our further displeasure. We sincerely
 “ wish you, and all with you, health, and
 “ the most signal assistance of the Al-
 “ mighty

“ mighty God, whose aid we have in-
“ voked, and of whose assistance we can-
“ not doubt, in a cause so just.

“ Your services will perpetually live in
“ our remembrance, and the annals of our
“ country must convey your names to pos-
“ terity with reverence and with love. So
“ saying, we recommend you to God’s
“ keeping ever.

“ Done at Petersburg, the 23d of July,
“ in the year of Grace 1788.

“ CATHERINE.”

This victory has finally proved how much Sweden can do. Gustavus can prevent the Russian fleet from going to the Mediterranean; and he might have done this without fighting, since the Russians would never have sent their fleet away, while a hostile navy is in the Baltic. The Swedish Monarch would have been more successful in Finland, with his army, at a period when Russia had no forces on that side,

fide, to oppose him. Fortunately for Russia, the disaffection of the Swedish Officers, prevented Gustavus from attempting any thing; and Russia, provident for her safety, had, by her Allies, the Danes, attacked Sweden in the Province of Gottenburg, thereby making it necessary for the Swedish King to leave Finland, and to draw what troops he could confide in, to defend his own country. This King, who lately held the haughtiest language to the Court of Petersburg, when he found his fleet defeated, and his army mutinous, sued for peace, through the mediation of Denmark; and now again, that Britain and Prussia have interfered to save him, he has assumed spirit, and an air of threatening.

Russia would, no doubt, wish to get rid of so troublesome a neighbour, at a time her attention is called towards Turkey, and especially as Denmark will not be allowed to fulfill her treaties with the Empire. The mediating powers might easily bring about a peace; but perhaps they rather

ther wish to mediate a balance of power between the contending parties, to prolong the war, and to weaken Russia and Austria to a level with Sweden and Turkey. If the Courts of London and Berlin are serious in wishing for a general peace, or alarmed for the balance of power in Europe, they should directly interfere, and enforce their request, the one with her naval, the other with her land forces. If, on the contrary, these Courts have blown the flame of war, they will look quietly on, until one or other of the party falls, and then endeavour to disguise the odious character of incendiary, under the cloak of mediation. Our Envoy, Mr. Elliot, at Copenhagen, solemnly averred, that his interference, in the name of his Court and that of Berlin, between the Danes and Swedes, was to prevent the effusion of human blood! Time will discover, whether or not this solemn asseveration was a mockery of human misery.

LETTER XVIII.

Life of Admiral Greig---Expedition of the Russian Fleet to the Mediterranean---Naval Engagement of the Turkish and Russian Fleets---Burning of the Turkish Fleet by Admiral Greig---Promoted by the Empress, in consequence of this gallant Action. ---Further Account of the Naval Campaign 1788.

Revel Nov. 1788.

ADMIRAL Sir Samuel Greig was born at a small town in the County of Fife, in North Britain. His father, a very respectable character, had a considerable property in shipping, and was himself bred to the sea: his mother was a daughter of ——— Charteris, Esq. of Burntisland.

Young

Young Greig accompanied his father in several voyages ; but aspiring to a higher command than that of a merchant ship, he entered into the royal navy, and, like the gallant Blake, rose from a cabin-boy in a merchant vessel, to supreme command in Imperial fleets.

When the last war broke out betwixt the Russians and Turks, this hero, then a Lieutenant in his country's service, and highly esteemed for every good quality, enlisted under the banners of Catherine II. who had made a request to our Court, to furnish her Imperial Majesty with Officers to conduct the Russian fleet, then intended for the Mediterranean. Happily for Mr. Greig, he entered into the service of a Princess with whom merit is the sole recommendation ; and with this, no catalogue of ancestry is required.

Lieutenant Greig was, soon after his arrival at Cronstadt, promoted to the command of one of the ships of Count Orloff's squadron.

squadron. The Russian fleet were in the worst order, and few ships were in readiness; yet her Imperial Majesty, confiding in the numerous British Officers and mariners on board, ordered what ships were ready to proceed; and ten sail of the line, with a few frigates and fire-ships, accordingly sailed from Cronstadt, under the command of Count Alexis Orloff, and Admiral Spiridoff. The other squadron, fitting out under the direction and command of Admiral Elphinston, were to follow, with all expedition. These two fleets, as soon as they arrived at Portsmouth, were joined by a number of English transports, loaded with provisions, and warlike stores.

Count Orloff's squadron brought the Turkish fleet to a general engagement, in the Bay of Tschesme. The Turks, though much superior in force, and lying in the strongest position in the Bay, at anchor, and with springs upon their cables, were forced, after a severe conflict, to cut, and run for the harbour. The Russian fleet pursued

pursued the flying enemy, and Admiral Spiridoff, determined upon signalizing himself, grappled with the Turkish Admiral's ship, both of them the largest in those hostile fleets. The Turk, scorning to be behind-hand in gallantry, threw his grappling-irons into the Russian ship, resolved to conquer or to die. Their ships were repeatedly in flames, and repeatedly boarded, the one by the other. A dreadful carnage ensued, and so eager were the crews in the work of death, that the flames were permitted to spread. The Turkish ship blew up, and soon after the Russian Vice Admiral's, carrying with them what remained of the seamen into the air! The Russian and Turkish Commanders were, with difficulty, prevailed upon to take to their boats before the explosion took place.

This awful scene struck with astonishment the surrounding navies. The engagement ceased: the Turkish fleet retired into the harbour of Tschesme; and the Russian took possession of the roadstead, which the other had deserted.

Count

Count Orloff called a Council of War, to consult of the practicability of destroying the enemy's fleet in the harbour. Many of the Captains gave it as their opinion, that the plan was impossible to be executed, seeing that the entrance to the harbour was narrow, and defended by strong forts and batteries, which could easily sink such vessels as must necessarily be employed in this service. When Captain Greig's opinion was asked, he instantly gave it in favour of the undertaking. "Will you command the frigates and fire-ships upon this expedition, and answer for its success?" said the Count. "I will," replied Captain Greig, "endeavour, to the utmost of my abilities, to execute your Excellency's orders." The Count desired the Captain to take such ships and such Officers with him, as he judged most proper to assist him.

Captain Greig, by twelve o'clock the same night, had every thing in readiness: there were four or five frigates, and as

many fire-ships : with these he approached the mouth of the harbour of Tschesme. Count Orloff, with all his Officers and men, listened anxiously to the horrid din that instantly commenced. The fire-ships entered the harbour, under cover of the smoke of the frigates fire, as well as of the enemy's forts and ships of war. The Turks, little expecting so sudden an attack, were thrown into the utmost confusion. The crews of the fire-ships, intimidated by the danger of their situation, could not, without difficulty, be brought to proceed. Their Officers, British and Russian, behaved with the greatest intrepidity, and with their own hands set fire to the trains. ---The crews hurried into the boats, without minding their Commanders, some of whom were obliged to jump over-board, and to swim after them. The Turkish Navy was soon in flames, and several thousand Turks were consumed with it ! The Russian frigates completed the enterprise, by levelling the forts, and destroying the town of Tschesme with their bombs.

The

The night was illuminated with the blaze; and when the flame subsided in the morning, nought could be seen, save the ashes of a navy, a fortress, and a city! Captain Greig, during the engagement, was slightly wounded, by a musket ball from the Turkish fort, which also broke one of the points of the cross of the order of St. George, which he then wore. This morning ushered in the naval triumph of Russia, and crowned our young hero with laurels. Count Orloff sent an express to Petersburg, by way of Greece, whose inhabitants were the friends of the Russians, and, by the return of this express, Captain Greig received her Imperial Majesty's approbation of his conduct, and a confirmation of the rank of Admiral, which was conferred upon him by Count Orloff, immediately after this celebrated victory. The peace which took place between the Russians and Turks, was hastened by this victory; and Admiral Greig continued, from this time, to receive marks of distinguished favour from Catherine II.

who committed to his care the entire management of the Russian Marine, which the Admiral brought to the greatest perfection of which it was capable. He was appointed Governor of Cronstadt, the Portsmouth of Russia, and had the several orders of knighthood of the empire conferred upon him.

For several years past the Admiral was employed in planning and overseeing the new fortifications of Cronstadt; the dry and wet docks, for building and repairing ships of war; the new Admiralty buildings, and other works: and had he lived ten years longer, he would have rendered Cronstadt the finest harbour and fortress in the world.

The King of Sweden, jealous of the increasing strength, usefulness, and beauty of this rival maritime port, has been actively engaged in erecting new forts at Sweaborg, in the Finland Gulph, the best of the Swedish harbours, and capable of
being

being rendered the strongest. The revenues of Russia must, however, always be a rival which Gustavus cannot match. The Admiral likewise established in Russia founderies for making cannon, and all the other machines of war.

I am now arrived at a period which closed this career of fortune and glory.

Early in the Summer of 1788, Admiral Greig received orders from her Imperial Majesty to equip a fleet, to serve again in the Mediterranean. From local circumstances, which it is unnecessary to mention here, the Admiral had nearly the whole of his crews to collect from the Russian villages! It was with men who were to be trained after they came on board, that Admiral Greig gave battle to the Swedish fleet, commanded by his Royal Highness the Duke of Sudermania, who opposed his passage to the Turkish coasts, in the month of July of the same year.

At the first onset, the Russian fleet were superior in force to the Swedes: but Admiral Greig was soon deserted by five of his best ships. The Admiral, however, undismayed, redoubled his efforts, and, beating three of the Swedish ships, who attacked him at once, among whom was the Duke of Sudermania's, pushed on, to relieve Captain Elphinston, whose ship was disabled by the fire of the Swedish Vice-Admiral, Wachmieser. The Swede struck his flag to this too powerful opponent; but not until most of his crew were killed, and his decks covered with blood! Vice-Admiral Wachmieser and Captain Elphinston had, for several hours, maintained a dreadful contest, and the circumstance alone of the Russian ship being rendered unmanageable by a shot which carried away her rudder, gave the advantage to the other. Even in this disabled condition, under the raking fire of the enemy, Captain Elphinston continued the engagement, until he was relieved by his Admiral. Both ships were almost
shattered

shattered to pieces, and their crews nearly all killed. The Swedish Vice-Admiral, when he came on board Admiral Greig's ship, delivered to him his sword; which the Russian Commander returned, with a just and elegant compliment, " that a
 " brave man, who fought so nobly for his
 " country, ought never to be without his
 " sword." This compliment is commonly paid upon such occasions, but it never was more deservedly applied than at present.

Admiral Greig delivered to Captain Elphinston the Swedish ship's colours, reserving to himself the Vice-Admiral's flag, which the bold Wachmister would never have struck to any other than an Admiral, but would have preferred carrying it with him to the bottom. The Swedish fleet retired, after a well-fought battle, in which all parties did their utmost for conquest and glory. Admiral Greig was wounded in the engagement, and was at the time labouring under a severe indisposition, occasioned by his indefatigable exertions in

fitting out this squadron. He rose every morning at four o'clock, and was often seen working with his own hands on board his ship. He rejected the advice of his Physician, who intreated him to go ashore, and to leave the command of the fleet, since every thing had been obtained which it was possible to accomplish this campaign. The Admiral persisted in prosecuting his advantage, and wished to rehearse, upon the flying Swedes, the scenes at Tschefme. Captain Trevenen was dispatched with a small squadron, to attack the Swedish fleet in the harbour of Sweaborg, where they had taken shelter; and he succeeded so far, as to burn one ship of the line, and some lesser vessels, besides taking the victualling transports, conveying stores to the enemy.

The Russian fleet kept the sea as long as the season would permit, the Commander paying no regard to his declining health: but in the month of October he carried his own division safe into Revel,
and

and sent the others to Cronstadt. Quite worn out himself, he yielded up his breath in his cabin, dying a willing sacrifice to the service of a Mistress who had so well deserved whatever he could do, to promote her glory.

Her Imperial Majesty sent express his Excellency Doctor Rogerson, her own Physician, to endeavour to save her favourite Officer.—It was too late!

Upon hearing of the Admiral's death, her Majesty exclaimed, "Where shall I find another Greig!" His name and character were so much respected by her Imperial Majesty, that Admiral Greig had only to speak his wish, in regard to regulations in the naval service, and it was ordered. He had too much modesty to ask any thing for himself. He has died, in every respect, like a Roman: but his august Mistress will not forget his children. "They are," her Majesty has said, "a sacred deposit in my hands."

In

In private life Admiral Greig was not less amiable than he was respectable in his public character : of great simplicity and modesty of deportment, humane, friendly, charitable ; a kind husband, and a tender father.

It is worthy of remark, that Admiral Greig, when a boy, was of a very timorous disposition. This would seem to have laid the foundation of that extreme caution which guarded all his words and actions. He was slow in his resolves, but intrepid and quick in executing what he had once resolved.

Some affect to say, that his abilities should have been employed in the service of his own country. Let it be remembered, that he first offered his services to his country, and that he had permission from that country to enter into the Russian fleet. When Great Britain shewed a disposition, in 1788, inimical to Russia, and even a rupture was expected, Admiral Greig

Greig declared openly, “ that he would
 “ sooner resign all his commands, and the
 “ honours with which Russia had distin-
 “ guished him, than ever be obliged to
 “ fire a shot in the face of his country.”

When Admiral Greig first arrived in Russia, he was not burthened with riches. A tradesman at Cronstadt behaved to him in a hospitable manner, and gave him board and lodging at his house. Lieutenant Greig, when promoted to a higher rank, not satisfied with returning the obligations he owed his friend, by recommending him to favours in the way of his profession, carried his gratitude further, and married the daughter of his benefactor. The Admiral has left behind him a widow, three young sons, and a daughter. The two eldest sons are now at Cronstadt, where they lately arrived from Edinburgh, to see their father, before he should sail for the Mediterranean : and they saw him, alas ! for the last time.

The Admiral has left orders, that his sons shall complete their education at Edinburgh, and then be placed apprentices in merchant vessels, as they had already declared their inclination to become seamen : after their apprenticeships are expired, they are to finish their naval lessons in the British Navy, and finally enter into the Russian service. The eldest has already the rank of Captain-Lieutenant, and the second son that of Lieutenant, in the Russian fleet.

Her Imperial Majesty presented the widow with 40,000 rubles, to purchase a house for herself and family, and granted them an annuity equal to the Admiral's pay as Governor of Cronstadt, besides the revenues of a considerable estate in the fertile province of Livonia.

LETTER XIX.

*Description of Revel---Sudden approach of
the Russian Winter---The Swedish Fleet---
A Palace of Peter the Great.*

Revel, Nov. 1788.

THIS town is pleasantly situated at the head of a small bay, near the mouth of the Finland Gulph: it is well fortified, and has a good harbour, capable of containing one-third part of the Russian fleet. That quarter of the town upon the hill is called the Citadel, and is separated from the lower town by a wall. Here is the Governor's house, the houses of the chief Officers of the Garrison, and Nobility, and the Cathedral, where the remains of Admiral Greig lie interred. The view from the hill must be extremely pleasant in Summer: the country lies before you, as upon a map.

Revel

Revel is crouded with failors and soldiers. The Winter has, however, proclaimed a truce for nine months, without asking consent of the hostile powers : to-day the harbour is frozen over, and the failors skating, where yesterday they were labouring with the oar. These few days have made an entire change in the figure of the people ; they appear altogether a new race, buried, from top to toe, in skins of Sheep, Beavers, and Foxes. The inhabitants of the woods have been plundered, to supply the trembling creature man with raiment. If he is placed under the warm Persian sun, he robs the silk-worm ; and here he strips the Bear and Sable of the only coat they are possessed of. Natural Historians inform us, that when the Beaver is chased, he cuts off, with his teeth, the bag of castor, knowing it is this for which he is pursued. I suspect he must likewise tear off his skin, if he would satisfy the generality of northern hunters.

Old Winter is as despotic a Sovereign as any in the north. The Sun lowers his
imperial

imperial standard to the hoary Monarch in his native kingdoms. The woods and bushes are all powdered with snow—the houses have taken on their annual covering. The dark sea yet washes the sides of the land, and forms a contrast with the snowy coverings of the plains and forests. But the waters must soon submit to the tyrant, and the Baltic be bound with icy chains. Such is the northern Winter! The soul shrinks at the idea, and withdraws to more hospitable climes, where the genial sun nurses vegetation all the year!

I delight to visit every climate, and anxiously wish to make the grand tour, that is, to visit the Artic and Antartic, as far as life is found; to tread upon the line, in African deserts, where the Negro sweats under the coolest shade he can find, and the King of Beasts lolls out his parched tongue!

A Russian frigate arrived, with intelligence that the Swedish fleet had left Helsingfors, and were then off Revel Bay.—
All

All was confusion. We dreaded a visit; and if the Russian fleet, then unrigged, had been attacked, the consequence must have proved fatal. Thanks to the soft, or disloyal hearts of the Swedish Officers. Though the harbour be frozen, the roads are still open, and ships of the line might come within a cable's length of the pier! Had Admiral Greig lived, the Russian fleet would not be yet unrigged, and exposed to an enemy, as if they courted destruction.

The Swedes have fifteen sail of the line at sea, and here lie ten, with their masts struck, and their rigging in the holds!—At this particular season of the year, when the frost first sets in, the weather, in regard to winds, is moderate, and as favourable as the Swedes could wish for a bold undertaking. Revel is miserably neglected: the harbour is capable of being rendered as strong as any in Europe, if batteries were erected in proper situations. The Swedes are passed, and we are at rest.

I have

I have been to see a palace of Peter I. at a small distance from this city, at the foot of the only hill, I believe, in the Province of Esthonia, and in the midst of a wood, cut out into avenues, in the old Dutch taste, which Peter imbibed while he wrought with his adze at Sardam.—The gardens of his other palaces, I am told, are in the same style.

This mansion has a handsome enough look outwardly ; but within, the Architect has studied the conveniencies of a Dutch Galiot—mean and aukward. There is something, however, that makes me forget all this, when I walk where Peter walked, and see the trees planted by his hand. I imagine his mighty shade hovers around me : I see him at every turning.

LETTER XX.

*Journey from Revel to Petersburg in a Sledge
 ---Travelling Dress of the Russians---Of
 the Russians and Finlanders---A Finland
 Tavern---Narva---Yambourgh---Ingria.
 Winter Scene---Arrival at Petersburg.*

Ingria, Nov. 1788.

I LEFT Revel Thursday morning, and, for the first time, seated myself in a sledge. I could not brook the idea of being dragged upon a hurdle to the Russian capital. A few miles travelling, however, soon reconciled me, and I found it very agreeable. A sledge is a large oblong basket, partly covered at top, in the fashion of an half chaise; this is put upon a frame, turning up in the front, like the bow of a ship. In this latitude one cannot use a chaise
 with

with any comfort ; besides, it is very heavy with wheels, and requires double the number of horses. It is wonderful with what expedition the bulkiest sledge is drawn along the surface of the snow.

Before travellers set out, they convey their baggage into the bottom of the sledge, if they journey with one only ; above this large feather-beds are laid, serving both to warm and to defend the traveller against the sudden jolting of the vehicle. Here he lies, covering himself with blankets and furs. He is, besides, dressed in furs ; a fur coat or pellice, boots lined with fur, and a cap resembling a muff ; nor is this wanting : his hands, cloathed with furred gloves, are likewise thrust into a muff almost as large as a French jack-boot. With this, too, he defends his face against the cold, which, in driving quickly, is felt to penetrate even this load of skins, if the wind be opposite. Now, if all this warehouse of garments be required, conceive the condition of an Englishman, in his

post-chaise and thin furtout, traversing Russia! He would not resemble, but actually be a frozen mummy; and the frost would preserve the carcase as well as the richest balms of Egypt.

We now see nothing but villages, half buried in snow. The roads are only distinguishable by the tracks of sledges, and red painted verst-posts. It is about three hundred versts, or two hundred miles from Revel to the capital. The road leads through the provinces of Esthonia and Ingria, bordering upon the Finland Gulph.

At the approach of Winter there are no storms; the breeze is gentle as Zephyr. The clouds almost brush the tops of the forests, seeming to rest their loads upon the branches. The Russian driver has found a method to disturb the silence of the midnight hour, by hanging a bell among the harness: he accompanies this instrument with his voice. There is no dif-

difference in dress between the Fins and Russians. I have found out which is which, by their manner of saluting. The Russian driver, when I give him a little drink-money, either bows, or gets down upon his knees, and touches my shoe or the earth with his head. He has a quicker eye in his head than the Fin. The Finlander embraces my knees, and kisses my cloaths, or, if you please, the hem of my garment. The Fin has a simple look.

We arrive at different posts, change horses, and away, like lightning. In the morning we entered a post-house, and had some coffee, while our bed of furs was adjusted in the sledge. It is made, as any other bed after a night's work. A Russian Gentleman is here smoaking his pipe; his servant is employed in putting his bed in order. His sledge is far preferable to ours, being neatly built and painted, with windows at the side, and curtains in the front; he has several feather-beds under him,

bolsters and pillows without number. This is very unlike the hardy Scythians we have heard of—but so things are; and the boor is as warmly cloathed as his betters; he rolls himself in a sheep's skin, with the wool inwards: were it outwards, he would look like a sheep upon its hinder legs: but the sharpness of a Russian eye is not favourable to that disguise. The accommodation is tolerably good from Revel to Narva. However, according to custom, we take our provisions along with us, ready dressed; a loaf, a cold tongue, and a bottle of brandy, are the contents of my wallet. It does not appear that the Postmasters are under any obligations to keep provisions for travellers, for reasons formerly noticed. At one of the posts, we could not even procure a bit of bread; at the next stage we had an excellent dinner, and a glass of equally excellent wine. There are accommodations of another kind to be had in those latitudes, at the lower order of taverns, called Cabacks, or Brandy-shops. I could not help

help taking notice of a sign-post, hung at the corner of a hut, within thirty versts of Revel, upon the Riga road. The painter had done his best to inspire other passions, besides that for brandy, in the way-faring Christians. The design was above criticism---the execution beneath it. I expected to see some living figures to correspond with the ticket. I saw a nymph, aged fifty, bringing water from the well. Had it been another Sarah, I might, perhaps, have rested my camels.

These provinces are chiefly inhabited by Fins; a people as stupid in their visage as the Russians are lively. They are now shut up in their cottages: very few are without doors. A dreary scene is every where presented to view, with scarcely the appearance of life.

We arrived at Narva at six o'clock, in the dark. A centinel demanded our passports as we entered the gates, in the name of some great man, or Prince, or Sovereign;

reign ; and in his own name he craved ten copies. You cannot be so unreasonable as to expect an account of Narva, seen only at four, or five, or six o'clock of a Winter's evening. I see a jumble of houses, and if the light, or rather the dark, does not deceive me, I see vacancies where houses might be built.

We pass under a kind of triumphal arch upon the other side of the town. I cannot imagine that this was erected in honour of Charles XII. The Master of the post-house in the suburbs advised us to stay all night, as the river Yamburgh was not sufficiently frozen to bear carriages with safety. We had to cross this river in our first stage from hence. My German companion would not consent to remain, and away we drove, our bells jingling, and our coachman singing.

We are now at the banks of the river, twenty versts from Narva. Our postillion is gone to procure some Russian fishermen
for

for our guides. I permitted the sledge and horses, the Russians and German, to go first. The pieces of ice, hurled together in this particular place, were to serve us for a bridge. I kept the caravan in sight, and walked with caution behind. The adventure was not of my planning, so I allowed the gentlemen to show me the road. I heard the water rumbling under me, and upon every side: this, at one o'clock, in a Winter morning, was no agreeable situation. We are safely over, and I have laid myself down to sleep. The postillion sounds his horn. I have looked out, and beheld what to me appeared enchantment: the Palace of Saladin, a noble square of buildings, and spacious streets. Am I in Petersburg? Surely it is at a greater distance from Narva, or I have slept a long time. This city, of whose existence I had never heard, is pleasantly situated, near the banks of the river of the same name. The moon, peeping out between two clouds, enables us to view Yamburgh.

The

The Postmaster is a Russian, the first I have seen in this office. As we approach Petersburg, the Postmasters are, in general, Russians ; and the Russian and Finnish villages more mixed together.

We are now in Ingria, and, notwithstanding that the ground is covered with snow, I can see marks of a fruitful country. It is level, and not incumbered with forests or brush-wood ; and, upon the roads, a number of sledges are loaded with all sorts of provisions, going to market. The sight is new and strange : every sledge has one small horse, and a reverend driver, cloathed in skins : a long beard hides one-half of his face, while a fur cap nearly covers the other. We find a sad alteration in our accommodations at the stages. The traveller, however, finds still a warm room ; and if he has tea or coffee, bread and cheese of his own, he may eat and drink ; and not otherwise. Every thing is good or bad, by comparison. I used to shrink from the entertainment at the German houses
in

in Livonia, and now, I wished for any dish, if it only smoaked. I cannot eat my cold provisions, in so cold a climate. Even a sharp air creates no appetite, if you are lying in a sledge among feathers. I am therefore convinced, that walking, and next to it riding, is the best exercise for the preservation of health, in every climate.

The Fins dwell in villages. I can see no detached huts in all the country. Their dwellings are wretched indeed. They consist of small fir trees, laid upon one another: the roof is covered with deal boards, and it is rare to see any of them new.--- What surprises me, they build their villages in open fields, when the neighbourhood of a wood might protect them from the severe weather.

We now draw near to Petersburg, upon a rising ground called Ropshaw, within forty versts of the Russian Metropolis.--- The view of the champaign before us is truly romantic. It is bordered with forests.

rests. The shrubs, of unequal height, powdered with snow, exactly resemble waves; and the thinly-scattered trees, and brushwood at the bottom, the masts and hulks of vessels.

We now entered a wood, twenty versts from Ropshaw, and soon arrived at the Palace of Strelina, upon the shore of the Gulph of Finland. The Gulph turns very narrow at Cronstadt, and the Palace of Strelina is several versts nearer Petersburg, which we can now distinguish---its gilded spires and domes, and the coast of Carelia, opposite to us, forming the north, as Ingria, where we now are, does the south shore of this narrow channel, leading from Cronstadt to the capital.

The ideal scenery at Ropshaw was here realised. I saw the frozen Gulph, with ships arrested in various parts, as they had been attempting to reach Cronstadt or Petersburg, at the setting in of the frost.

Petersburg is eighteen versts from Strelina, where we come upon an elegant road, having marble and granite columns, to mark the versts. The seats of the Nobility are a farther ornament to this grand avenue into the capital. The snow is spangled with temples, Chinese palaces, and many superb buildings, all the way to the gates; and, what is still a finer sight, the road is crowded with a brave and industrious peasantry, bringing to that emporium every necessary of life.

Had one trod the banks of the Neva a hundred years ago, when the foundations of Petersburg were not laid, and forced his way through the bull-rushes, which then overspread them, and were he now to behold this new creation, he would imagine himself in a dream, reading the Arabian Night's Entertainments. If Milton had wrote within this period, I should have supposed that he had borrowed from those wonderful improvements the ideas expressed in these beautiful lines:

Anon,

Anon, out of the earth, a fabric huge
 Rose like an exhalation—
 ———— from the arched roof,
 Pendant by subtile magic, many a row
 Of starry lamps, and blazing crescents !

LETTER XXI.

Petersburg---Journey to Cronstadt, over the frozen Gulph of Finland---Taking of Ozakow by the Russians---This Fortrefs will be of great Importance to Russia.

Petersburg, Dec. 1788.

THIS morning, for the first time, I saw the sun rise from the woods furrounding Petersburg. Having made the tour of the streets, I sat down to write you a description of a city—but taking, accidentally, a volume of Fenelon's, I found it done to my hand.

Salentum is yet in its infancy; the walls are not yet built; the Doric, the Corinthian, the Ionic pillars of its temples are just forming. The sound of the hammer, the songs of the workmen, re-echo from
the

the neighbouring forests. The Household Gods of the Salentians are not yet placed in their niches.

Idomeneus, the great founder of this emporium, too soon entered into quarrels with the adjoining states. He laid the foundations of his city upon disputed ground: he appealed, for his right, to the sword; and although he had, perhaps, an equal right with the Prince who opposed him, Idomeneus preferred the decision of arms to all others: he preferred such quick decision to the slow forms of equity and justice. He was rather cruel than unjust; he was rather great than good.

Idomeneus paid the utmost attention to the arts and sciences; he recommended them to his subjects, after his usual method, *vi et armis*. He delighted most in those arts which taught to prepare for war---in knowledge which taught him to defy, rather than to appease his enemies.---He was not singular in this taste---nay, he

he had learned it in his travels among savage nations, who, indeed, called themselves polished, because their swords were kept in the best order for war.

You know it was common for heroes to give themselves titles drawn from some supposed excellence in their armour. Our Black Prince owed his name to his coat of mail, and others were surnamed Long Swords, and Short Swords, and Daggers. Idomeneus, then, was the Hatchet Prince: this was his sceptre---this was his northern talisman, with which he wrought greater feats of magic, than Odin did, with his Runic characters. Mahomet and Odin called in religion to their aid; and had Idomeneus followed their example, he could have easily procured divine honours. He was born in a profligate age, when beads and prayer-books were out of fashion: his ships were his altars, his Generals and Admirals were his Priests, and they were not more bloody ones than the Apostles of the Arabian and Scythian Field Preachers.

P

Idomeneus

Idomeneus has left behind him many honourable debts to pay—many disputes to settle. The neighbouring Princes still feel the edge of his hatchet, and take every opportunity to be revenged.

Peace has not long blessed these plains, since Idomeneus left the world ; and it will require the most prudent councils of Mentor to steer clear of war, the destroyer of industry. The empire is abundantly able to defend itself, and even to beat all its enemies ; but this will not increase its agriculture and trade, and it has no occasion for more extent of dominion. Peace, therefore, ought to be the sole object of its Government ; and in peace, population, agriculture, and commerce will increase of themselves. The Government have only to wind up this huge machine, and keep it clear of dust, for we must allow Idomeneus the honour of its construction ; and a nation that has so little to dread from war, in regard to its safety, and so much to apprehend in regard to its prosperity, can
the

the more easily, and ought the more anx-
iously to avoid war.

As I wandered in the streets, the first object that struck me, was the equestrian statue of Peter the Great. I cannot describe the emotions I felt. This statue does equal honour to the munificence of Catherine II. and to the artist, M. Falconet.

I saw, at some distance, the imperial residence. I walked in front of it. Perhaps this is Catherine, at the window. "If it please your Imperial Majesty," said I to myself, "I am arrived in your capital, by your own order, obtained from your Governor of Riga. But I am not come as a Spy: I venerate the great founder of this Government, and his successors who walk in his footsteps."

Next day I embarked in a sledge for Cronstadt. Our road lay over the frozen Gulph of Finland. The day was stormy, and clouds of snow drifted around us. I

never felt the severity of cold until this day: I am shivering to death, though buried in a fur coat. The sun bowed himself under the horizon at three o'clock in the afternoon, and left us to grope our way the best we could. There are yet some parts of the gulph not frozen, occasioned by cracks in the ice. Our postilion is very careful, but very cold—he runs with the horses, to keep himself warm.

You have heard of the Glaciers of Savoy: the northern Glacier extends over all the Baltic—over all Scandinavia—and from Scandinavia to the North Pole! Had Winter seized this gulph in a stormy day, it would have been a very rough turnpike. Fortunately it was arrested in a calm, and is as smooth and level as a bowling-green.

It is common for the Fins to go from Finland to Sweden in Winter, across the Bothnian Gulph. Figure to yourself the peasants travelling in their sledges, loaded with cheese, butter, and poultry, where lately a ship of the line had been tossed in
a hur-

a hurricane ! We are jogging on to Cronstadt by the light of the snow : the moon cannot attend to every part of the Russian dominions at once. When the moon shines, the snow serves as a reflector to her lamp, and rivals day. The coachman gave us notice of Cronstadt being at hand. I looked out, and saw some wooden huts sticking among ice and snow : there was no appearance of land, which was level with the water, and clad in the same uniform with the ocean. I saw, too, the Russian Navy, firmly bound in the harbour, dismantled of its rigging, and hung round with icicles.

I walked the streets in a melancholy mood :—I viewed before me the residence of its late Governor, now no more ! Tears filled my eyes as I entered—the Admiral's youngest boy was in the parlour. I placed him upon my knee, and pressed him to my bosom ! Admiral Greig has left behind him a widow, three young sons, and a daughter. The Empress is now the guar-

dian of the children—they have no other capable of the charge, and need them not.

It was a fine morning when I returned to Petersburg. The sun seemed to stretch a degree in altitude at mid-day, for the honour of the northern climate. The black woods of Finland fringe the plain of ice on either side, as we proceed. Cronstadt lessens to the eye as we look behind us, and the spires of Petersburg rise majestic in the eastern horizon. The sunbeams polish her gilded turrets, which appear like gold pins hanging from the firmament!

On my arrival at Petersburg, I heard sorrowful tidings of our gracious King. We are all here in agony for our Sovereign, and fervently implore the Almighty to restore him to health, and to his people!

The Russians have at last struck a blow at Mahomet. The fortress of Oczakow has

has been taken by storm by Prince Potempkin's army. A horrid slaughter of the garrison ensued. It is said, upwards of seven thousand were put to the sword! The cannon of the Citadel and Admiralty are announcing the victory to the inhabitants.

Oczakow is now taken for the third time by the Russians, and has cost them altogether near 100,000 men! If Russia is so foolish as again to give it up to the Ottomans, they will deserve to be laughed at. The fortress itself is of vast consequence. In regard to the Tartars, it is well situated to keep them in order, and gives Russia more command of the navigation of the River Niester, and establishes her more firmly in her settlements upon the Black Sea.

Russia, formerly an inland kingdom, and without almost any knowledge of a sea, before she established a maritime power, had first to conquer the lands leading

to the sea-coast. Ivan Vasilivitch I. and II. extended their dominions upon every side. Towards the north, they found a sea unclaimed by any power, and they had no struggle in assuming its sovereignty. Peter I. not satisfied with those frozen lands and waters, seized upon three seas in finer climates, the Black Sea, the Caspian, and the Baltic, and seemed to consider them only as additional provinces to his empire.

LETTER XXII.

*Winter Dress, and Diversions of the Russians—
Manners and Customs—Russian Jubilee—
Ancient and Modern Dresses of the Russians.*

Peteriburg, Jan. Feb. 1789.

THE first day of the year is a great day at Court: every star, garter, and ribbon, is waiting upon her Imperial Majesty. The cannons, drums, and trumpets are all at work: these are the drawing-room furniture of an Imperial Palace.

It is now desperately cold weather, no less than 25 degrees of Reaumur. I shall be frozen to a statue. We drive about the streets and upon the Neva in sledges, of a different construction from those used for travelling; some resembling a small boat, and others the body of an open chaise.

The

The higher ranks in general, however, use their coaches, placed upon a sledge frame: and it is merely for an hour's amusement when they drive in sledges.

Every gentleman and lady of the lower order, *as long* as they have a copic to spend, lay it out chearfully in hiring the street-sledges, ranged at all the corners, *pro bono publico*. They look like so many phaetons by the speed of their horses; only their carriages have no wheels.

The ishwhoshics, or sledge-drivers, make it a point of honour to pass every other brother of the reins; they use no whips: there is a continual struggle for such pre-eminence. Their horses are excellent; few of them worth less than twenty or thirty guineas. The ishwhoshics, by a peculiar management of the reins, make them answer the double purpose of a whip, and indeed they have but to speak to their geldings if they wish them to run; they cannot stop them so easily. I have
never

never seen horses with more spirit. Peter I. used those street conveyances, in common with his subjects ; and it frequently happened that he had not money in his pocket to pay the fare : on which occasion he borrowed of some person or other to discharge it. Peter's attention to great matters left no time to think of little matters, for which little men will never forgive him. The Russian beau attends his mistress in a sledge, sitting with her or standing behind. The grand field, where they parade, is the Neva. It is the race ground where the gentlemen display their expertness at driving, and the fleetness of their nags ; a part of the frozen river is railed in for the purpose. But, in ordinary, there is racing every where, and it is well if one escapes being rode down. This gives constant exercise to the eyes in watching, as well as to the feet in getting clear off. And this, I presume, may be the cause of the quick step and look of the Peterburghers. There is a perpetual flight in the streets, to preserve legs and arms, and the word *pady*, or
get

get out of the way, resounds from morning to night. Street travelling is much cheaper here in Winter than in Summer. The sledges are very numerous : many of the Russians in the country, whose work is put an end to by the frost, come into town with their horses, and commence hackney sledgemen. When Summer returns, the gentlemen and ladies are turned out of their carriages, and again press the pavement with their feet. The wheel carriages are double and triple the expence of the Winter equipage. There are no regulations for the hire ; a circumstance which very frequently calls forth the most violent exertions of oratory. The ishwhoshic knows by a glance of your countenance how much to ask—If you are a foreigner, he demands five times his fare ; if a Russian, he only asks double. Calculating upon receiving a half of his demand from each. The hirer makes an offer *en passant* ; it is refused, and he walks away : the ishwhoshic endeavours to persuade him to give more, until the gentleman is out of

of hearing, when, being convinced that argument is fruitless, he drives after him, and receives the passenger without exchanging another word. Those sledges actually add to the severity of the Russian climate. The quickness of their motion, if the wind is in your face, occasions, besides the increased coldness, a sensation as if your brow was cut with a razor. Against this you must defend yourself as you can by the aid of a muff, which covering the whole of your face, you sit very comfortably while taking an airing in the dark. The ladies have the advantage of their male relations: they paint inch thick; which, if it does not add to their beauty, at least prevents them from being frost bitten; I see the fair damsels galloping in 20 degrees of *Reaumur*, without even a bonnet; while the sons of Mars, swords, bucklers, *and all*, are rolled up in sable. Vanity in our sex has the same effect as paint in the other. A Russian beau of the first magnitude despises a warm dress, as it spoils his shapes—he struts in silk stockings, a
 hat

hat and cockade; and as often as the cold will permit, he throws his fur cloak aside, to display his silk breeches, and satin vest.

The Police are very attentive to preserve the people from using improper freedoms, or exposing themselves to this ungracious climate. The theatres and all places of public amusement are shut, when the cold is seventeen degrees of Reaumur. A custom of the Russian Nobility and Gentry makes this regulation absolutely necessary. Asiatic pomp prevails here, as much as at Ispahan or Delhi, in defiance of ice and storms. They make their attendants wait with their carriages wherever they go, for one, or for ten hours, as it happens, let the cold be ever so violent. The miserable grins of those half frozen wretches, convince me that it is not their choice: the coachmen are sometimes froze to death, upon their boxes. I shall talk of the hardiness of the natives, when I have seen it. Could I forget for a moment such barbarity,

rity, this affected pomp of frozen attendants would be truly laughable. Every gentleman who is entitled by his rank, rather than by his fortune, to be drawn by six horses, must have that number: but no regard is had to quality, size, or colour; so that it is common to see among the six horses, four of different tints. The coachmen have beards, hanging to their girdles, and from every hair depends an icicle: the postillions are all young boys, blowing their fingers: add to this portrait the sheep-skin doublet, and a cap of the same stuff, as black as if the skins were already prepared for shoe leather. To contrast this spectacle, the great man within, and his two or three liverymen behind the chaise, are covered with gold lace. Many of the Nobility go to the other extreme, and the magnificence of their carriages, their horses, and their servants, are becoming only of crowned heads.

The Russian Jubilee has commenced.—
Ice hills are erected upon the Neva, and
all

all the apparatus of a Bartholomew Fair. The river is crowded with the best, and with the worst company : much is the noise of men, and dogs, and boys. There must be at least thirty thousand people assembled. Her Imperial Majesty Catherine II. drove amidst her subjects in a sledge, followed by several others, with the attending Officers of the Court. A party of the Hussar Guards escorted her Majesty. The same day appeared the Grand Duke and Duchess, and after them came their children, the young Grand Dukes and Duchesses. We had with us the whole Imperial House of Russia, and they were received with every demonstration of loyalty and affection. The severe Winter procured the Neva this honour. These assemblies do not take place upon the river unless when the ice has attained such a thickness as may insure safety. This Winter is uncommonly severe, and seems remarkable, even to the Russians. There is no riot with all this bustle---not a furly look, nor a single blow given or received. The Russians are
so

so busy in drinking, singing, and laughing, that they have no time for quarrelling. The police are watchful ; but there does not appear to be much reason for their vigilance. The temples of Bacchus and of Venus now open their gates. These are built here of a construction proper for the climate, having stoves, folding doors, and double windows. The staggering votaries of the former make the air resound with their songs. A Russian never walks by himself when he gets drunk, if he can lay hold of a friend : three or four stagger in concert, and, very socially knock their heads together. They get drunk in company, and rise and fall as one man. They do not tinkle for hours ; they swallow as much in two or three minutes as completely does the business they came about. If there be no sophas at hand, they can make a shift to lie wherever they tumble. With regard to love, and to dress, a beard a yard long is in high estimation among the fair nymphs of Russia. The Scotch have a merry air beginning with

Q

The

The Carle he came o'er the craft
 With his beard new shaven.

Such a preparation in a Russian lover would go near to ruin his suit. The commonality have still a great veneration for this fringe of human hair, notwithstanding the efforts of their Monarchs to root it out; and it is only those depending upon Government, in the Army and Navy, who have yet complied with the custom and the wish of the Court. Those who retain their beards, retain likewise the ancient dress; the long swaddling coat, either of skins, or of coarse cloth lined with skins, in Winter, and in Summer, of cloth only. About their middle they have a sash of any colour; but what they mostly affect, is green or yellow. They wear trowsers instead of breeches and stockings: their limbs are, besides, wrapped in many folds of woollen stuffs to keep them warm, and above all they wear boots. Their shirts are fashioned as women's; their necks exposed to the cold, and as hard and impenetrable, from

from this practice, as a piece of adamant. Government continue to exert every nerve to compel the subjects to adopt the German dress. The Clergy alone excepted, none can procure any place, any favour from Court, upon other condition than banishing the Asiatic sheep-skin robes. The worn-out veteran retires with a pension, upon the express terms of never again assuming the habit of his fathers. But so jealously attached are the multitude to former manners, and so honourable do they esteem them, that a Russian dressed in his beard and gown, tells you by his looks that he has not prostituted the memory of his ancestors.

The dress of the women is the reverse of the men, both in fashion and colour. Every part of it being as short and tight as decency will allow, and as gaudy as their copics will admit. The dress of the Russian women is exactly the same with that of the Highland women in Scotland: both have the short jacket, the

striped petticoat, and the tartan plaid ; and both too, in general, have a napkin rolled about their head. The Russian women are, however, far more elegant and rich in their attire ; nor is gold lace wanting to set off their charms, any more than the art of painting. The young generation are modernizing these antic vestments ; the stiff embroidered napkin is supplanted by one of flowing silk ; the jacket and petticoat are of muslin, or other fine stuffs ; and the plaid is exchanged for a silk or sattin cloak, in the cold season, lined with fur. The better class of females wear velvet boots. The dress of the higher ranks is after the French and English fashion : and all must have a covering of fur six months of the year. Thus equipped, the prince and the peasant are hurled in their chaises and sledges through the dreary Scythian Winter.

LETTER XXIII.

Petersburg contains the most striking assemblage of all Nations---The Russian Theatre---The native good Taste of the Russians for Music---Specimens of the most favourite Russian and Cossac Tunes.

St. Petersburg, Feb. 1789.

I FEEL myself here as in another world, the dress, the manners, and customs of the people are so different from those of other nations in Europe.

Besides the variety of nations which compose the Russian Empire, in my daily walk through the city I meet with English, Danes, French, Swedes, Italians, Spaniards, Portuguese, Venetians, Poles, Germans, Persians, and Turks; the latter are arrived here prisoners from Oczakow. This as-

sembly is a natural masquerade, and no city upon earth presents any amusement of this kind in such perfection as Petersburg. In other great cities the variety of strangers are not so distinguishable as here, owing to their accommodating themselves to the dress of the country in which they reside, or sojourn, in order to prevent the mob from staring at them.

In Petersburg there is no need of this compliance: let foreigners be dressed ever so oddly, they will find, in every lane, subjects of the Russian Empire to keep them in countenance. She brings into this ball her various swarms, from the snowy mountains of Kamschatka, to the fertile plains of the Ukraine—a space of 4,000 miles! Siberians, Tongusians, Calmucs, and an endless train of Tartar nations, the Fins, the Cossacs, &c. Petersburg is a strange city, even to the Russians: it increases daily, with new recruits from every corner of the empire.

Russia resembles an heir newly come to his estate. She is only beginning to learn, and seems struck at her own importance. This young heir has got his different Masters to attend him: the English Master is teaching him the art of navigation and commerce; the French, as usual, to dance and to dress; the Italian is drawing plans for his house, and teaching him to sing; the German makes him wheel to the right and left, and teaches him all the other arts of war.

The truth is, the Russians are going on too fast in affecting, as well as attaining improvement. Foreigners have put too many things into their heads, and, I believe, are picking their pockets, by the idle schemes with which they amuse them. The Russians, in general, look upon foreigners as a kind of superior beings, in regard to the arts and sciences. They value themselves chiefly upon their valour, and the strength of their army and navy.

The improvement that first attracted my attention is the theatre: in the depth of a six month's Winter, this naturally attracts us from other objects perhaps more valuable. They have French, German, and Russian Comedians, and an Italian Opera. The masquerade is a favourite amusement at this dreary season. There are such great distinctions of ranks without doors, that they are happy at times to sink and forget these in a masque. On the contrary, in England we are so much upon a level, without and within doors, that it would be no amusement or relaxation to repeat the same scenes: and this I take to be the reason that we have few masquerades.

The French Actors are highly esteemed; and I assure you the Russian Players are no less so, in comedy. The latter have a peculiar turn for works of humour; but in tragedy they cut a poor figure. Tragedy has no charms in their eyes, and I am very much of their way of thinking.

There

There are a sufficient number of melancholy scenes presented every day in real life: I prefer, with the Moscovites, to sing and dance while we may.

This turn for humour in the Russians is attended with a fault: their comedy too often approaches to farce. They enjoy, with all their souls, their native operas, in which are introduced rural scenery, and manners, and native airs. Were I not afraid of your calling me Goth, I would tell you I prefer many of the Russ songs to the Italian: they are simple, but exquisitely pleasing—the Russians forget every thing else while they are listening to them. Even among the waggoners, and other rustics, we shall sometimes find five or six, dividing their voices into as many keys, and producing a concert, no way contemptible. They are self-taught, and do not understand what tenor, or bass, or triple means. I wonder that the Italians have not pretended that some David Rizio had

had visited this country, seeing they are jealous of their quavers.

The Russian instruments of music are simple as their songs: of these, the bali-leka is the favourite of the common people. This is a kind of guittar, with two strings: the performer places it upon his knee, and strikes the wire with such art, as to move some corresponding chord in the breast of every Russian within hearing. Several of their other instruments resemble those of the ancient Romans; particularly the pipe of Pan is matched by their whistle, of nine or ten joints, placed at each others sides, of unequal lengths.

You must always expect to hear poetry mentioned with music. Russia has produced two excellent poets, in Lomonosof, and Sumorokof. The songs of the peasants are not destitute of poetry; and, as they convey the truest characteristic of a people, I will hereafter endeavour to give you a translation of some of the best.---

Poetry,

Poetry, under all its disguises, has delivered to us more faithful pictures of our ancestors than history. This sublime art impels to truth. Truth is the actor in poetry; fiction is the scenery and dress.

I send you with this letter a specimen of some of the most favourite tunes of the Russians and Cossacs, which resound upon every road and through every village in Russia. I have omitted the variations by modern Masters.

LETTER XXIV.

*Easter Holidays---Of the River Neva---
Russian Climate---Winter Market at Pe-
tersburg, a great Curiosity---The Benefit
which the Russians derive from the severe
Frosts.*

St. Petersburg, March, April, 1789.

THE Easter Holidays have ended, and the Bartholomew gambols are again renewed, but not upon the ice. The Neva is beginning to shake off his icy chain: it is only when he is a bound slave that people venture to tread upon him.

One of the squares of the city was fixed upon for the exhibitions. Wooden huts are erected, within which the multitude are entertained with *brandy and theatrical amusements*. Besides the *dramatic* scenes in those huts, there were a variety of sways,
upon

upon which the Russian lads and lasses mounted together into the air. I saw several Turks swinging along with their conquerors. I was happy to see the poor Mahomedan prisoners in such good spirits. Indeed they are treated here with much humanity. Peter I. had, no doubt, brought the models of those entertainments from London or Amsterdam, as the best to be had at that time. They do not appear to be of Russian original. It is surprising to view the first Nobility of the empire, driving in their carriages around the circle which holds the rabble, staring at one another, and at the mob, for hours together.

The Neva, by the continual frost since the beginning of November last, has attained an amazing degree of thickness, and it would seem to require a whole Summer to melt it. Were the river to remain shut until the ice was melted, there would be no navigation of it before July or August. The current of the river, when the ice turns weak and porous, by the melting of the

the snow upon its surface, hurls this body away, and clears the Neva; and the Neva, in like manner, clears the Lake Ladoga.— Soon after the Neva ice is gone, the rotten ice of the Ladoga is drawn into the river by its current. Nature has cut out a river from most of the northern lakes, to drain them of their ice. The intense heat of the Polar Summer assists in this work, and to render them soon navigable, for the purposes of fishing and transporting of merchandize. An intense sun might reduce the ice to a perfect honey-comb; but while it floats, it incommodes all navigation, and therefore the rivers are absolutely necessary to disperse it.

It has been asserted, that the northern Winter is the best season for transporting merchandize, from the uninterrupted smoothness of the roads, over the frozen land and water. This is so far true---it accelerates the transporting of goods in sledges, from inland parts, to the principal towns situated near lakes and rivers, to be sent by water, in Summer, to the
great

great marts of trade, as Petersburg, Archangel, and Riga: but the goods could not be brought to these last ports by land-carriage, from one or two thousand miles distance, allowing the roads to be ever so smooth, without raising the prices to an enormous height. It is by shipping alone that the Russian commerce can be effectually supported. Petersburg is supplied by land-carriage in Winter, with provisions; not because land-carriage is cheaper or more convenient than carriage by water in Summer, but because the provisions cannot be brought at any other season with safety. A live stock cannot be brought to market, at the same expence, as when killed and packed at the place where it was fed; and besides the expence, a live stock would require to be fatted at their arrival. When killed, cold weather is the only season, in a country where the Summer is so warm, for transporting the carcases to market, fresh, as well as to salt and convey provisions to the cellars in distant towns, for Summer's use. Wild game, and fish, in particular,

particular, could not be conveyed fresh, in any other manner, from a distance of many hundred miles, but in a frozen state. I need only add, that fish here is the principal article of consumption. The frozen market in Petersburg is a curiosity peculiar to Russia. It is not held upon the river, but in one of the great bazars, or squares, in the suburbs. Here is a very extensive picture of dead life---a kind of resurrection of quadrupeds. The peasants who sell the collection to the inhabitants, place the dead animals, stripped of their skins, upon their legs, and in different postures. A stranger beholds, too, with wonder, an innumerable variety of the feathered creation--an extensive collection of zoology:--every tint with which Nature has painted the feathered inhabitants of earth and air, is strewed around at the foot of tyrant man! The hare, cloathed in his Winter robes, is not permitted to wear them long, but is dragged to swell the various feast.

This vast wholesale warehouse supplies the other bazars in the city, where beef

R

is

is cut down, and sold in the smallest quantities. The fish, from a size not two inches in length, to the fine salmon and sturgeon of from three to five feet, are heaped in frozen piles. The young fry of the lakes and rivers should not be suffered to be sold in the markets: it will in time exhaust that liberal gift which Providence has bestowed upon this nation, in filling her lakes and rivers with every variety of the finny kind.

LETTER XXV.

Of the Tartar Army at Petersburg---Reflections upon War---Of the Propriety of driving the Turks out of Europe---and giving a King to Greece from the Descendants of Peter the Great.

St. Petersburg, April, 1789.

THE Winter ended two weeks before the ice broke up in the river, and the sun's rays had become very warm. This is the most disagreeable season of the year in this province. The melting of the snow renders the streets and roads a perfect mire. The citizens are picking their way through a sea of mud.

This forenoon Summer was proclaimed in the skies, while yet the head of the

Gulph of Finland, betwixt Peterſburg and Cronſtadt, is a field of ice, and for many leagues into the ocean. Loud peals of thunder rent the clouds. Alas! the approach of Summer proclaims likewise the approach of war! The ſtreets are daily crouded with troops, marching to the frontiers of Sweden: the Temple of Janus is opened. I heard from my window the trumpet's ſhrill ſound: I went out, and followed the regiments, and mixed with the croud attending them. "May you conquer our enemies, and return victorious and unhurt," ſaid a poor peaſant to a ſoldier; and while he ſpoke, the tears guſhed from his eyes. The ſoldier ſtepped aſide and kiſſed him. The inhabitants look wiſhfully at thoſe going to fight for them. The ſoldiers ſeem pleaſed with this mark of tender concern, and graſp their muſkets firmer in their hands.

Several thouſand Tartars, Baſkeers, and Kirgees are arrived, and encamped near the city. They are all horſemen: poor
miferable,

miserable looking creatures, especially the Kirgees. They resemble a band of Gypsies, and their encampment keeps up the resemblance. Their tents are of poles covered with rags, and in addition to these, a few ruinous huts. Their arms are bows and arrows, and a kind of spear; a piece of stick with an iron spike or nail at the end of it. Their horses are very small, but spirited animals, continually fighting with one another. The horse-furniture is a wooden saddle, softened with rags, a very useful article in a Tartar equipage; a bridle made of a leather thong or bit of rope, of a simple construction. But as the Tartars speak to their horses, they have the less occasion for spurs or bridles. The Tartars observe no kind of order in their camps, and very little in their march: they have no uniform, though a blueish colour is the prevailing fashion among them. The fashion of their coat differs not much from the Russian; but it is shorter, and with open sleeves; over which the Officers wear a long robe of scarlet or

other gaudy colour, ornamented with narrow gold lace, or embroidered, more or less, according to their dignity. Their caps are of skins, with long flaps hanging about their necks and ears. The common men are so ragged and dirty, that one is at a loss to describe their habiliments.--- Their face is short, and rather oval, with high cheek bones, aquiline noses, small lively eyes, tawny complexions, and low stature. They are very awkward in their gait in walking, but quite at home upon horse-back; and they delight in inclining their bodies to one or other side of the horse, to shew how easily they can recover themselves. They frequently practise shooting at marks, and seem to have no ideas, but such as relate to their horses and their quivers. The Officers have pistols and sabres, richly ornamented with silver and gold. The armour of their men is very mean—they have all of them sabres, but are ill enough provided with muskets, with and without locks. They are not fond of fighting with, or against musketry :

kettry: what work they do in battle, is done quickly, and loading takes up time: they beat, or are beaten, in a moment. I am at a loss to guess what service they can be of in Finland, whose rocks and mountains, so unlike the Plains of Tartary, will be another world to those tribes, and overturn all their schemes of war. They may, indeed, butcher the defenceless peasants; but I hope this disgrace will not happen to the Russian arms. The strictest regard to the laws of war, can alone alleviate its horrors, or adorn its triumphs. No situation, no provocation, no necessity will apologize for cruelty. Would a monument, hung round with human heads, like the gates of the Kings of Persia and Dahomy, who drench every passion in the blood of their subject slaves, transmit a hero's name with honour to posterity?--- Such might have been erected for Montcalm at Quebec. The orders, or the permission of that accomplished and intrepid Commander, to the Savage Allies of France, to commit wanton acts of barbarity,

urity, tarnishes the crown of glory that otherwise would have been his due: and even the sacred memory of Wolfe is sullied by permitting retaliation.

I lament the war of Sweden with Russia, and earnestly pray for a speedy termination of it. With regard to the Turks, the enemies of the Christian name, I could wish to see them dismissed from Europe. Notwithstanding the follies and vices of Rome, I cannot patiently behold the murderers of the Greeks and Romans. If Greece and Rome gave us the first models of laws, religion, arts and sciences, is it grateful in us to suffer, and even to protect a monument of their disgrace? Would it be cruel to send the Ottomans to inhabit the fertile plains of Asia Minor, now deserts for want of culture? Would it be illiberal to separate the Greeks and Turks, to prevent thereby the daily torments endured by the descendants of the Athenians, to abridge the empire, and to shorten the reign of barbarism? The ancient connection

nection of Moscovy with Greece, through the intermarriages of their Sovereigns, points out the Imperial House of Russia as the legal heirs to Turkey in Europe.

I do not conceive that a junction of the Turkish and Russian Empires would be favourable to the general balance of power, or to their individual interests. But, perhaps, were the Grecian Crown placed upon the head of a younger branch of the house of Peter I. it might preserve the political balance of power, much better than to suffer the Turks to remain, to be played off at the pleasure of intriguing politicians, against the repose of Europe. There would be no danger from the family compact of Greece and Russia, unless it could be proved that the Houses of Bourbon and of Holstein have increased their power by their family connections. The history of nations, as well as that of individual families, abundantly proves, that opposition of interest, and mutual jealousies, are able to divide brothers and cousins, just as easily as any other neighbours.

There

There cannot happen a more favourable period than the present, to give Greece a King, and liberty, and to preserve those few relicts of her former splendour which still remain. To raise Greece again from her ashes, and to make her again the seat of learning and of elegance, would do more honour to the powers of Europe, and to humanity, than all their political balance schemes and intrigues, which as yet have only served to make mankind more wretched—their Cabinets have been the nurseries of war, and legal murder.

On this subject it may be further observed, that the Tartarian hordes have for ages continued to disturb Europe, and still continue to do so. The present war in Europe is occasioned by disputes of which they are the foundation. After having themselves ceased to be a terror to European Powers, bloody strife still subsists relating to those vagabonds, altogether degenerated from their former character, which, though fierce, was distinguished by
many

many noble and manly virtues. It throws unspeakable disgrace upon Europeans, to permit the Tartars and Saracens of Turkey and Africa still to disturb their repose: and, what adds to this disgrace, Europeans keenly engage in quarrels with one another, while they not only put up with every indignity from insolent Barbarians, but even take a side against those European Powers who have the spirit to attempt their extirpation.

LETTER XXVI.

Former State of Russia---Of the Tartar Nations---Of the Conquest of China by the Tartars.

St. Petersburg, April, 1789.

THE Russians, not many hundred years ago, were in the same state as the Tartars now are; and even after they settled in the country of Moscovy, they continued under bondage to the Tartar nations, who surrounded them upon all sides. The Czar Ivan Vasilivitsch I. released his people from this degrading situation, and his successor, Ivan Vasilivitsch II. effectually rooted out those freebooters, and overawed them in their turn. From this period, the Russian Monarchs extended their conquests, and, by a rapid progress, the vast

vaſt regions from the banks of the Nieper to Kamschatka, which views, from its ſhores, the American mountains, a ſpace of four thouſand miles, acknowledged their ſceptre. The moſt northerly parts of Siberia are inhabited by Fins, and Tartar tribes, in the loweſt ſtate of civilization; the ſouthern provinces border upon Tartary, properly ſo called.

There are many of the Tartars ſtill independent, if we call by that name the liberty of running from the protection of one Sovereign to that of another. The Ruſſian Government give them every encouragement to ſettle in Siberia, and in the Kingdoms of Caſan and Aſtrakan; and the Tartars begin to ſhew a diſpoſition to become huſbandmen. The Kalmuc hordes are the moſt obſtinate: they dwell near the Wolga, and maintain themſelves by fiſhing, and with their flocks and herds. They reſuſe the name of Tartars, becauſe the word ſignifies a vagrant.

The

The Kalmucs are esteemed by the other tribes as a superior class; the Kirgees are much inferior in character, as well as in wealth: yet I could not help looking with veneration upon our Scythian fathers, though in rags. The Kalmucs deny them. The Kirgees, Baskeers, and other Tartars, deny the Fins---the Fins detest the Laplanders; and the Laplanders, buried in their earthen caves, esteem themselves of divine origin. This is the best ridicule of family pride and connections that I have met with.

The Fins are quiet and industrious, and consequently superior, in some respects, to all the others. "But," say the Kalmucs, "they are farmers---they till the ground" "---they are clowns: we are huntsmen" "and warriors, the immediate descendants" "of Zinghis Khan and Tamerlane, conquerors of India and China!"

The Tartars are at this day divided into four grand divisions: the first inhabit their
native

native plains of Tartary, under their Khans; the second are mixed with Chinese, under the same government of laws; the third having submitted to the Government of Russia, or to its protection, dwell in Siberia, and upon the banks of the Wolga; the fourth acknowledge the Sultan of Constantinople for their Chief, and pitch their tents in Little Tartary; the last of these divisions arrived, under the command of a descendant of Zinghis Khan, at the time the Crimea was in the possession of the Genoese, whom they drove out, by the assistance of the Turks: hence the alliance between these two hordes. The Turks consider the Tartars as slaves; and their Princes of the House of Ghyri, their first Leader, receive an annual subsidy from the Porte, upon condition of appearing in the field with an army, in the Turkish wars. The Turks depose their Princes at pleasure, but they appoint a Khan always from among the relations of the Ghyrian race.

Those

Those people have partly changed Masters since the conquest of the Crimea by the Russians: but they are still attached to their old Masters, from habit and similarity of religion; and many have deserted to the Turkish provinces adjacent.

Emigrations from the mother country, at various periods, filled the country joining. The new settlers, following the example of the Crimeans, adopted in part the Mahomedan Religion, and became Allies of the Porte. The Moguls, or Kal-mucs, settling upon the east of the Wolga, were entirely separated from their brethren in Little Tartary. The Czars of Moscow permitted them to live in their own way, only upon condition of remaining quiet, and paying a trifling tax, in their lamb-skins, which are famous, and universally worn in Russia. As the Kal-mucs, notwithstanding those gentle terms, were much addicted to lawless disorder, and plunder, Czars were more than once obliged to curb their insolence and depredations.

dations. They could claim a superiority to the Crim Tartars but in one point--- their steady adherence to the religion of the Lama: both pursued the vocations of hunting and robbing. The Crimeans were distinguished by the name of Mahomedan Tartars, and considered as Apostates.

Mountainous countries are said to be most favourable to liberty; and yet the Tartars, in their wide plains, boast of freedom: their emigrations, to seek the protection of foreign Monarchs, however, proves that they have got Tyrants at home, who, no doubt, contend in arms with one another: in consequence of which, the defeated are happy to find an asylum in other countries. The freedom of unpolished nations, indeed, consists merely in lawless plunder, and disputes. When a wandering nation are prevailed upon to settle, and to submit to the laws of their Prince, he ill deserves the name of Tyrant, who endeavours by laws, by commerce, and by other means, to re-

S

form

form his subjects, even in spite of themselves, and make them capable of liberty !

None but the speculative enthusiast will ever brand the sacred name of Peter I. nor of any Prince who pursues measures similar to his, with the name of Tyrant.—There cannot be a stronger proof of a Monarch's wishing his people to be free, than that of his taking every step to render them capable and worthy of freedom.

The Kitan or Kathan Tartars, were the first conquerors of China, and gave their name to it, Cathay ; by which name it is still known to the Tartars and Russians, who call, too, the stuff Nankin, the famous manufacture of China, Catayka.---These first conquerors, in conjunction with the original natives, built the celebrated wall, to keep out the numerous swarms that crouded after the Kitans to their good fortune. The Kitans and Chinese were, however, overpowered successively, by the Mongul and Tongusian Tartars.

tars. It is a Prince of the last horde that now sits upon the Chinese Throne.

The ruin of the Chinese Empire would have naturally followed its conquest by the different nations of Tartars, had the Tartars then been the barbarous race they now are ; and a second Rome have tumbled before the Goths of Scythia. The Romans, unable to save themselves, saved China. In their expeditions into Tartary, they left behind them a taste for the arts, and, no doubt, many stragglers of their legions. The Tartars had, besides, in their wars with India, procured a taste for industry as well as for plunder ; and monuments of ancient grandeur, the remains of noble cities and other works, incontestibly prove that Tartary was formerly the seat of elegance and arts. Those tribes, who boast their resemblance to the ancient Monguls by their present vagrant life, expose their ignorance and degeneracy.

It would appear that China had drawn into it all the enterprising and industrious

Tartars, for those left behind fell off from the reputation of their forefathers ; or else, the success of one tribe, in the conquest of that country, raised a similar spirit in their brethren at home, which however subsided at last, after many conflicts among themselves, in subjection to one or other of the great powers around them. That part of Tartary which sent China her present Lords, is under the same law, and its natives still acknowledge the Emperor of China for their Khan.---They have several times attempted, with the assistance of the Chinese, to subjugate other kingdoms in Tartary, but have been repeatedly drove back, by some brave and numerous hordes, which yet remain to defend the tombs of their ancestors. The Monguls and the Tongusians, when they passed the great wall, were not one-hundredth part so numerous as the Chinese : a civil war among themselves gave an opportunity for attack to a few daring invaders. They copied the example of the Romans, and, by adopting the dress and manners

manners of the vanquished, prevented them from seeing this inferiority of numbers. The Tartar language, also, bearing a near affinity to the Chinese, the conquered could not distinguish, in the armies of the usurpers, who were Tartars, or who their countrymen; nor know, of course, with what probability of success they might be attacked.

China may be considered as a province of Tartary. It has been certainly, from the earliest period of time, peopled by refugees from this mother country, flying from tyranny and oppression. The mountains afforded them protection, and the delightful climate and rich soil, easily invited those who had fled from war, to arts of peace. It was probably owing, in like manner, to defeat and oppression, that colonies were driven into China, by sea, from Egypt.

LETTER XXVII.

*Finnish Nations---Error of M. Buffon---
Customs and Manners of the Tartar Na-
tions---Of the Religion of Barbarous Na-
tions---Similarity of Customs between the
Tartars and American Indians.*

St. Petersburg, April, 1789.

THE Finnish nations in Europe are those inhabiting Finmark, and the provinces bordering upon the Gulph of Finland. They are different from the other tribes, inhabiting the more northern parts of Europe and Asia, in language and religion. Their manners have a nearer resemblance, as must happen to tribes and nations, whether they be of the same origin or not, dwelling in the same climate, and under the same circumstances. Difference of language is not always, however,

ever, a certain proof of a different origin; nor, on the contrary, is similitude of customs a proof of the same original---if it were, the Fins and Tartars are nearly related to the Romans. “ We find in Lap-
 “ land,” says M. Buffon,* “ and in the
 “ northern parts of Tartary, a race of
 “ small-sized men, whose figure is un-
 “ couth, and whose physiognomy is as wild
 “ as their manners are unpolished; though
 “ they seem to be of a degenerate species,
 “ they yet are numerous, and the countries
 “ they occupy extensive. The Laplanders,
 “ the Danes, the Swedes, the Moscovites,
 “ the inhabitants of Nova Zembla, the
 “ Borandians, the Samoeids, the Ostiaks
 “ of the old continent, the Greenlanders,
 “ and the Savages to the north of the Es-
 “ quimaux Indians of the new continent,
 “ appear to be one common race, which
 “ has been extended and multiplied along
 “ the coasts of the northern seas, and over
 “ deserts considered as uninhabitable by
 S 4 “ every

* Histoire Nat.

“ every other nation.” This hypothesis M. Buffon attempts to support, by similarity of size and features ; but this resemblance is merely ideal. The Russians, Swedes, and Danes, are as unlike the natives beyond the Arctic Circle, as the other inhabitants of Europe. They are in general tall, well made, and comely, and as different in language and customs as any two people can possibly be—except in one instance ; wearing fur cloaks in Winter.

The Asiatic tribes, inhabiting Siberia and the banks of the Wolga, are divided into Fins and Tartars. The latter prevail in number. The Laplanders, with the Greenlanders, Fins, and other tribes upon the Frozen Ocean, were, without doubt, the original inhabitants of Russia, Denmark, and Sweden, and had been driven out by the ancestors of the present possessors ; a matter which is confirmed, in a certain degree, by the traditions of Lapland.

The

The Russians call the first numerical figure Odin, probably in allusion to the first in place and dignity, as this celebrated Leader was of the northern hives. The native country of Odin is Scandinavia. As we approach the Pole, or enter the distant plains of Tartary, he is less known. In Tartary he was only a Chief of a wandering tribe. In Scandinavia he was the Sovereign, and God of fixed nations. We find the Laplanders and Tartars in particular having other Gods than Odin: they worship the Sun, in which, however, they suppose the existence of a divine being.—The Asiatic Fins and Tartars offer to this luminary annual sacrifice; in Spring, to supplicate a plenteous harvest: and in Autumn or Winter, to return thanks for it, they offer the fruits of the earth. The Ostiac Tartars have some simple instruments of music among them, and some simple tunes; they add to these, extemporary songs, and, when inspired with the bottle, extemporary verses. They have pantomime dances: the dancer puts on a mask,

mask, and changes his dress, as he would imitate different men, beasts, and birds. In those Tartar masks it is easy to discover the origin of our modern masquerades, and our Scythian extraction. These customs are common to many tribes, and in their dances, the women affect the most amorous gestures; in which particular there is a resemblance between them and the Russian females. Their manner of dancing is exactly the same as that of the women of the islands of the Indian Ocean, represented in the plates of Captain Cook's voyages.

Besides the sun, the Tartars have various inferior Deities, presiding over vegetation, over harvest and hunting; and every family too, and every forest, and river, and lake, has its peculiar God. The lower man is sunk in ignorance, the greater is his fear; he multiplies his Gods, as a kind of body-guards, against the equal number of evil Genii which his fertile imagination creates along with them.---

He

He cannot conceive how one Deity is able to extend attention and protection to all animate and inanimate substances.--- Even in our most exalted state of knowledge, it is almost too great a weight for the human mind to comprehend the vastness of a Power, which of itself created and regulates all things. As our minds enlarge, the fictitious Gods are banished. The lakes, the woods, and firm land, and floating seas, are, as it were, delivered into the hands of one Almighty Governor !

In the sacrifice for obtaining plenty of food, the women are permitted to join ; but in no other sacrifice. Many tribes, who deny the female title to future existence, imagine that it is unnecessary in the ladies to solicit the Gods, unless for present subsistence. The Tartars open a furrow in the Spring, with great ceremony ; and in this they are imitated by their descendant, the Emperor of China. If the harvest fail, they say it is owing to the Christian part of their countrymen, who
offer

offer no sacrifices. They have a grand festival in honour of all the Gods, and make their offerings before fires, as at an altar. They throw cold water upon the victim, and if it does not shiver at the seventh ablution, it is deemed an unfortunate omen. The Priests, when the victim is dressed, hold up in a dish part of the animal to the Gods, and then divide the rest among the votaries, as was also customary among both the Greeks and Romans.

Parents, and age, over all the east, are highly venerated. In the Assemblies, in which matters of war and hunting are debated, the old men are first heard. The North American Indians present the most striking pictures of filial love, or rather of filial adoration, in the annual resurrection of their dead relations. The Asiatics do not carry their respect to so awful a degree, yet they transport the bodies of their dead friends to vast distances, to be interred near their other relations, if they happen to die in the country of strangers;
and

they have annual festivals, in commemoration of the dead. The Tartars in general are very pious and sincere in their devotions : every one holds a rosary in his hand, by which they mark the number of their ablutions. The Priest sits cross-legged upon his heels, facing the congregation ; he recites the prayers in a soft and pathetic tone of voice, and the assembly repeat them, or answer amen to each. The prayers of such tribes as are of the Mahomedan Religion, are in the Arabic language. When the word *Alla* is pronounced, every one heaves a profound sigh, stops his ears, shuts his eyes, covering his face with his hands, and bending it towards the ground, as if unworthy to hear the sacred name pronounced, or to look up to Heaven.

The Tartars wish to be interred near the tombs of reputed Saints, as well as their relations, carrying their affections and their zeal to the grave. If the weather be hot, and the distance considerable of these sepulchres, the dead body is reduced to a
like-

skeleton, which is transported to the destined place; while they bury the other parts where death first arrested them. When a Tartar, in travelling, chanceth to ride by the tomb of his friend, he enters into conversation with the dead---inquires into his present condition, and, snatching a handful of hair from his horse's mane, deposits it upon the tomb. The Americans resemble the Tartars in every thing regarding veneration for the dead, and funeral obsequies. They place the dead body upon a cloth, presenting it with different viands and fruits, put a pipe in its mouth, and converse with it concerning the accident which occasioned his death. They ask if his wife, or sons, or daughters had vexed him, and broken his heart; promising satisfaction upon the delinquents, and to perform annual honours to his manes. The Russians have still remaining among them customs similar to these: and, in several other customs of the Scythians, the similarity between their manners and the Americans, would seem to confirm

confirm the idea of America having been peopled from the north-eastern parts of Asia.

The Tartars formerly, when richer than they are now, used to bury, with the dead, valuable articles of silver and gold: yet such is their veneration for their ancestors, it is still held, as it always was, the highest sacrilege, to plunder the sepulchres. The Russians, less scrupulous, find great treasures in digging the tombs in Siberia and Tartary. This proves the degeneracy of the Tartars more than any thing else: the permitting strangers, I mean, to disturb the shades of their fathers. But their ancient spirit no longer exists, and even the Kalmuc will soon begin to put most value on things of this world.

LETTER XXVIII.

The different Tartar Tribes---Marriage Ceremonies---A Tartar Divorce---Trial for Adultery in Tartary---Tartarians Gods and Goddeffes---Funeral Orations---Anecdotes of the Circassians---A Tartar Love Song.

St. Petersburg, April, 1789.

THE various nations of Tartars are not only jealous of their distinct origins, but of preserving their race pure and unfullied from mixture, unless with the Monguls or Kalmucs, whom they esteem the highest class. There are small villages in Siberia, which contain a whole nation of those unadulterated species, covered with rags and nastiness, and sunk into the lowest degree of ignorance. Sometimes these little nurseries

ries of empires are reduced to ten or twenty families, and no longer able to exist of themselves, they intermarry with the tribe among whom they dwell, if these happen to be of inferior rank, as none other would admit of such alliance. Hence the language of the reduced tribe, as well as their peculiar manners and customs, in a short time become extinct. The Arinzes, a Tartar tribe inhabiting Siberia, reduced to a small number by war and misfortunes, fled and associated with the Kat Schinzes, taking wives among them. In the year 1735, when Messrs. Muller and Gmelin visited the Yenisei, there was only one man left who spoke the Arinzian language. Mr. Muller found this person useful in giving him words for his vocabulary, from a language nearly expiring. When Mr. Muller, and his fellow-traveller, Gmelin, visited the same part, in the year 1740, the Arinzian was dead, and the language of his nation, and his nation itself with him!

T

Whatever

Whatever disputes may arise about the origin of men, the origin of women affords no grounds for any. It is perfectly distinct. They are all of the same race and family---whether they are placed under the Pole or the Line---whether they tread, bare-footed, the deserts of Tartary, or lead the dance in the gayest Parisian Assemblies, they shew themselves to be of the same genuine stock, in customs and manners. The Parisian lady pillages every toy-shop to ornament her person: the Tartarian damsel, for the same end, is equally eager in exploring the shores of every lake---every hill, and plain, and wood: in order to set off her charms, she picks up every pebble and shell. They all agree in one pursuit---man. Their language and oratory are the same---their eyes, their tears. They allow men to conquer Asia, Africa, Europe, and America, and when men have done, they lay hold of the victors.

Wives, among all those northern and eastern nations, are purchased by the men;
and

and so soon as a Tartar female is marriagable, the mother hangs a white sheet upon the outside of the tent, as signal to batchelors. The parents in Tartary, as well as in Europe, keep to themselves the privilege of making the bargain. The bride, as custom demands, struggles hard at leaving the family hut: the bridegroom requires assistance in dragging her away; as it would appear forward and ungrateful to seem to go willingly from her parents and Household Gods, and immodestly to rush into the arms of a strange husband. They at least make a show of

—Innocence, and virgin modesty,

That wou'd be woo'd, and not unfought be won.

MILTON.

The bride is carried to bed, by force.--- Among some tribes, they set her upon a mat, and, taking the corners, carry her into the bed-room, saying to the bridegroom, "Here, Wolf, behold thy Lamb!" But then comes the ordeal trial: if the bridegroom suspects the virginity of the bride, he returns the wanton to her relations again, allowing,

however, the purchase-money. Among the Ostiaks the custom varies: if the bridegroom be satisfied with his bride, he presents, next morning, a rein deer, to his mother-in-law: but should he not be satisfied, the mother-in-law presents a rein deer to the bridegroom; thereby justly and ingenuously implying, that the daughter being under the mother's care, the praise or blame of her conduct belongs to her guardian. If a Tartar is determined no longer to bear with the frailties of his wife, he goes up to her, and tears off her cap or veil; and this, of itself, constitutes a divorce. The Tongusian, when he has detected his wife in criminal connection with other men, challenges the adulterer; and, being armed with large clubs, the challenger first receives several blows from the challenged, upon his back, which is then returned alternately, until one or other is killed, and frequently both. If the adulterer refuses the challenge, he must pay whatever is demanded by the injured husband, in cattle and goods.

The

The Tartars have their Gods and Goddesses in as great abundance as the Greeks and Romans, with other names, but with the same employments. Their Juno is called Youma Ava, or Mother of the Gods; her sons are the inferior Deities. Pan is christened Vadasch, and we find him at his old trade of sheep-herding. The men are under the protection of the Gods, the women of the Goddesses, whom they address separately. Unlike the ancients, they bestow the title of Thunderer upon an inferior Deity; and, indeed, leave very few things for Jupiter to do, except to get children. The Tartars have some Furies too, but I have not found over whom they preside, as the Tartar husbands keep their wives in tolerable order with the help of a whip—a famous instrument in northern countries for making peace---It is the olive branch of Scythia,

Polygamy is permitted among the Tartars, yet it is only the wealthy who can indulge in this; the women chusing, in

general, to have a poor husband to themselves, rather than to be one of two or three to the richest Chief. If a Tartar has not sufficient money or goods to purchase a wife, he serves his father-in-law a certain number of years, as Jacob did of old; or perhaps he steals a wife from a strange tribe. They prefer Kalmuc women to all others, alledging, that they preserve the marks of youth longer than those of the common race of Tartars; and to procure such alluring wives, they make incursions into the Kalmuc countries, in order to carry the women off. The haughty Kalmucs would never consent to such marriages.

Should a Tartar leave a Kalmuc widow, she displays, in a funeral oration, the heroic tenderness of her husband, who did not purchase her with vile cattle or money, but ventured his life to obtain her: she boasts of his conjugal love, his generosity, his wisdom, his economy, and wealth; the number of cattle which he
had

had stolen, and slaves which his valour had procured him. She pourtrays the noble figure he made upon horse back, in the chace, and in battle.

The Tartars are not remarkable for the chasteness of their character; yet we find examples, even among the Circassians, who make a trade of beauty, of respect to decency. These, when under bondage to the Khan of Crimea, were obliged to furnish his haram with a handsome young virgin annually. The Khan sent regularly his Officers to demand this tribute to lust. It happened that the Officers using improper freedoms in examining the girls, were put to death by the enraged fathers and relations. They collected their forces, and they cut in pieces the army of the Khan, which was sent against them to revenge the murder of his Ministers.

From native poetry and songs, the disposition of a people are best determined; and if we may judge of the amorous com-

plexion of the Tartars from theirs, we shall think very highly of their tender feelings. The following is a female love song, literally translated from the Kalmuc language; the subject, the absence of a lover.

As ever in the morning the larks exalt their voice,
And I listen to their song:

So my beloved comes incessantly into my mind!

Ah! my father! excellent at shooting with the bow!

Ah! my mother! of so kind a disposition!

Must it then abide only in my thoughts?

Thoughts are ever deceitful;

Sensual perceptions alone are real.

O, my friend! let this be told to you—

The conjunctions of Nature are powerful.

The approach of our fate is concealed.

Bliss flies of itself, unexpectedly,

And is destroyed by the vicissitudes of the course of the world.

Let me try how it will look in another dress, or rather freely paraphrased.

The lark, the cheerful harbinger of light,

On quiv'ring pinions hails the op'ning day,

And as he soars, dispels the silent night

With rapt'rous song, with Heav'n-inspired lay.

Alas!

Alas ! his song no comfort brings to me,
 Sad recollection of my absent love !
 This little Cherub laughs at misery,
 In Heaven's bosom plays—or myrtle grove.
 O ! happy they who in love's wedded bands,
 Their bodies and their souls together press'd ;
 My father, brave as e'er trod desert sands,
 My mother, fair and yielding, both are blest'd.
 Oh ! come my love ! nor let deceitful glow
 Of bliss, not real, haunt my nightly dreams :
 Life's but a day—Oh ! let's that day enjoy,
 For short-liv'd bliss, in its short passage, swims,
 Soon into deep futurity will sink,
 Uncertain if to happiness, or woe :
 Then come, my love, the living substance drink,
 And let our souls, on earth at least, some pleasure
 know !

Those Tartars who deny the rights of
 women to a future state, at the same time
 exempt them from all crimes here ; and
 they are subject to no laws, but the restraint
 of their husbands. Other tribes admit their
 ladies to accompany them to the other
 world—where, say they, good men will
 find their families, their cattle, and pro-
 perty of various kinds, in a much better
 state

state than in this. According to their near or remote acquaintance with their Mahomedan brethren, their religion is more or less mixed with its tenets: and sometimes the doctrines of the Lama, and of Mahomet, are so jumbled among the common race of Tartars, that it is difficult to say what they profess. They call their Heaven the land of perfect perfection: their Hell is a cold one, where the poor wretch is doomed to wander, shivering, naked, and forlorn.

LETTER XXIX.

Customs and Manners of the Tartars---Interesting Anecdote of the Torgot Horde---Specimens of Tartar Poetry, from the Accounts of the Russian Travellers---M. Pallas's Account of the Kalmucs---Anecdotes of the Tongusians, the best of all the Tartar Nations---Politeness to their Women.

St. Petersburg, April, 1789.

THE Scythians, though shepherds, never resembled, in the least, the portraits drawn of Arcadian swains. Their crooks are spears; their mellow pipes, are harsh-throated horns; and their hamlets are filled with bows and poisoned arrows.—They are butchers rather than shepherds: their flocks are fed for slaughter. Where there is agriculture there is proportionable peace and protection: but there is not the like

like security and repose in the pastoral life. However brave they may be, we shall find that nation most averse to war, where agriculture and commerce flourish most.--- Where there is a fixed and great property, the possessors are not fond of running the chances of war, by which they may lose, but cannot gain.

The Tartars are hospitable to strangers. In their prayers, they beg that God would bestow plenty, to enable them to warm and comfort the traveller. When you have once procured their friendship by kind offices, they seldom betray any confidence put in them. To one another they are very kind in misfortune, parting with a share of their wealth to re-instate their countrymen in the condition from which they had fallen. Some Writers apologise for their depredations, on the ground that they proceed from a false notion of bravery. When a band of Tartars, or I shall say a foraging party, have seized upon a herd of cattle, they make a feast, and what is not needed for

for present consumption, is sent home.---
 As they grow weary of the expedition,
 they drop off, without asking leave of any
 one. Their prisoners they make their
 slaves, as no Tartar, unless in the utmost
 necessity, will be a menial servant. The
 women discover, as every where else, a
 mild and humane disposition: they are
 the prisoner's advocate with their fierce
 husbands, and often connive at their es-
 cape, at the hazard of their own lives.---
 The Russian Government, having found
 the Tartars rather fickle political friends,
 oblige them to give hostages; and it is
 common to see, in the streets of Petersburg,
 a Tartarian Prince, who is security for his
 father's or brother's subjects. If it be
 true, that the Tartars are abject slaves to
 their own Princes, whom they almost a-
 dore, we are at a loss to reconcile with
 this their love of freedom. It would seem,
 they are attached to their old customs, ra-
 ther than to actual liberty; and when un-
 restrained in hunting and robbing, they
 imagine themselves free. Their ardent
 love

love of a wandering life is strongly marked by the following occurrence.

The Torgots, a Mongolian horde, formerly inhabited the banks of the Wolga. The Tartarian horde to which they belonged, dissolved, at the death of their Khan, Galdan Zeren, in the year 1746. Part submitted to China; part fled to the deserts, to enjoy independence; and the remainder acknowledged Russia for their protector, and pitched their tents near the Wolga. They had frequent disputes with the various hordes already under the Russian Government, and were constantly endeavouring to subdue each other. Their dread of falling, at last, into the power of some of these, or of the Russians, who were under the necessity of interfering, in order to keep their Volgaic hordes in awe, made them conceive the design of marching back into Soongaria, their native country. Their Priests, to accelerate their motions, foretold their bondage to the Russians, who, they pretended, would oblige them

them to follow agriculture, and furnish recruits for the Imperial Armies. Trembling at this idea, the whole body moved, in the beginning of the year 1770, towards the plains of Soongaria. The ground was covered with snow, and they had a vast tract of country, and many rivers to pass in their journey; the hardships of which, and the attacks they experienced from the numberless Tartar nations in their way, reduced them more than one-half before they arrived at their destination. In this state, they fell an easy victim to the Chinese, who forced them to apply themselves to husbandry, and dismissed their Priests, whose councils might soon again remove them.

Among those who were detained by the Russians, who pursued them, and brought several thousands of them back, we find a piece of poetry, the burthen of which is the flight of their brethren, and their melancholy situation in being divided.

As

As when the heav'ns, in a night serene,
 The twinkling stars illuminate the scene,
 And gild the azure firmament on high,
 And fling their sparkling glories thro' the sky.
 'Tis silence all ! and peace and pleasure reign,
 No cloud obscures the air, no storm the main.
 At once a solemn gloom draws o'er our head,
 Involving earth and heav'n in one dark shade.
 Such quick vicissitudes of bliss and woe
 Attend the curst fates of men below.
 Our friends are fled ! we solitary stay
 Where the deserted Wolga finds his way ;
 Where, too, the lovely Mazak's orphan stream :
 Ah ! is it thus ? or do I only dream ?
 No ! no ! they're gone !—at least bid us adieu !
 And say, " with broken hearts we part from you !"
 Sad is the journey for your flocks and herd ;
 Was it not better what we have prefer'd ?
 Or, shall we, Heav'n forbid ! drag Slav'ry's chains ?
 While you, in freedom, scour your native plains !
 How lank, how lean will be the gen'rous horse,
 The herds how crippled with so long a course,
 O'er rugged frozen hills and snowy dales ;
 Fate bids it so, and Fate o'er all prevails.
 Ah ! comfort us with hope of your return !
 Must we from Household Gods be ever torn ?
 Must we for Household Gods and you for ever
 mourn ?

" The Kalmucs," says M. Pallas, " are
 " more active than the other tribes. They
 " are

“ are a cunning people, but social ; even
 “ in temper, upon every occasion ; friend-
 “ ly to their dependants, and faithful to
 “ their Princes ; which is remarkable in
 “ such widely extended plains and in such
 “ a vagrant people. Were it not owing
 “ to their attachment to their native man-
 “ ners, they would not keep together.—
 “ Their tents are of felt, made of the wool
 “ of their sheep ; and, indeed, so hairy, it
 “ is fit for nothing else, but very fit for
 “ this, keeping out the wind and rain,
 “ and being very portable. They are car-
 “ ried by camels, which, however, do not
 “ thrive well in those regions. A com-
 “ mon property among them, is ten cows
 “ and a bull, or ten mares and a stallion ;
 “ but they number sometimes by hun-
 “ dreds and thousands. They use the
 “ bulls for beasts of burthen, and keep
 “ many of them, esteeming one bull as va-
 “ luable as fifty cows. The lambs of their
 “ sheep supply furs for pellices, or great
 “ Winter cloaks.”

U

“ When

“ When a Kalmuc horde intends to re-
 “ move in search of fresh pasture, which,
 “ in Summer, they are under the necessity
 “ of doing every four, six, or eight days,
 “ people are, in the first place, sent out
 “ to reconnoitre the best spot for pitching
 “ the tents of the Khan, or Prince—for
 “ the Lama, or Priests—and for the idols.
 “ These begin the march, and are followed
 “ by the whole troop, each chusing what
 “ place they think best in the cavalcade.
 “ The Camel that is loaded with the most
 “ precious furniture, is decorated with lit-
 “ tle bells; the rest march in a string, the
 “ one behind the other. The Bulls, with
 “ the less valuable burthens, are driven on
 “ before. On those days, the girls dress
 “ themselves in their best apparel, not
 “ forgetting the art of painting, which is
 “ common to the Asiatics: they have the
 “ charge, together with the boys, of lead-
 “ ing the cattle, and on the roads they
 “ beguile the tediousness of the journey
 “ with their songs. Besides milk, the
 “ Kalmucs are fond of roots. They pro-
 “ cure

“cure tea, though at a high price, from
 “Russia, which they mix, or sometimes
 “substitute wild herbs intirely for this be-
 “witching beverage. They cannot en-
 “dure hot rooms, and are very healthy.”

The *Monguls*, or Kalmucs---the *Mand-
 shours*, or Tongusians, are the two most
 distinguished tribes of all the Tartar na-
 tions. They both claim their descent from
 the Conquerors of China, and boast of
 native Princes who have sat, or still are
 seated upon the Chinese Throne. The
 Kalmucs, the nation of Tzingis Khan,
 were driven out of China, A. D. 1368.---
 They revenged their disgrace upon the
 other Tartars, and deluged their native
 plains with blood, in search of new settle-
 ments. They have now little to distin-
 guish them but their name. The Mand-
 shours, more fortunate, were called in by
 the Chinese during a civil war; and the
 wooden horse, once admitted within the
 walls, has kept his station. The Kalmuc
 Monguls inhabit the countries situated up-

on the Wolga. The Mandshours, at the other end of the earth, pitch their tents upon the banks of the Amur, and coasts of the northern and eastern ocean. The Kalmucs, tired with unsuccessful struggles, submitted to the protection of Russia, and the tattered remnants of Tzingis Khan's host craved leave to rest under the wing of the Imperial Eagle. The Tongusians bravely defended themselves against the first Russians who ventured to attack them in their native country; but they were at last vanquished, by the superior discipline of their invaders. Though vanquished, their spirit was the same, and breathing still independence. They revolted when an opportunity offered, and murdered the Russian Tax-Gatherers. It was not until the year 1657, that Russia had obtained the peaceable government of a part of this generous tribe. The Kalmucs are chiefly distinguished from the common race of Tartars, by their form of government, which is monarchical. Their attachment to their Princes keeps up some order

order among them, and discipline. The other hordes chuse, among themselves, Chiefs, according to their ideas of their abilities, paying, at the same time, due attention to the wealth of those elected.

The Kalmuc dress nearly resembles the Chinese, no doubt from their long residence among that people. The country of the Kalmucs is most favourable to agriculture, being of a good soil and climate, and not incumbered with woods; yet the breeding of cattle is their favourite employment, as it is attended with less manual labour, which they abominate, as derogatory to their high descent, rather than from any aversion to eat the produce of the lands, for they purchase meal and other articles from the Russians. The Kalmucs I have seen at Petersburg are of a middling size, and it instantly strikes you, upon sight, that you had seen them before.--- Any person in the least conversant with the History of China, and who has seen the plates in the histories of that country,

U 3

will

will be at no loss to know a Kalmuc whenever he meets him. Their head and face are broad and round; and they have small eyes and noses, with swarthy complexions. Their head is shaved, all but a small lock at the top; and they wear a bell-fashioned cap. The Tartar visage runs through the whole.

They have learnt at Peteriburg to get into chaises, where they cut a droll figure, when contrasted with the powdered Courtier, in his *vis-a-vis*. They have not learnt how many are proper to sit in a chaise at a time, and pack together in crouds, resembling a ring of bells. They are said not to be the most cleanly in their persons: their idle way of life easily accounts for this. The Tartars who profess Mahomedanism, have at least changed so far for the better, in learning to wash themselves. They are a lively, and seem naturally an ingenious people; but their lazy habits, and vagrant life, have naturally given them all the attendant vices. There are few instances

stances of murder among the Kalmucs, which, as they are exceedingly irritable and revengeful, is attributed to their belief in Ghosts.

Murder, among the Tartars, is punished with death, and that inflicted by the hands of the deceased's relations. If, however, they cannot find the culprit, and their anger abates, they frequently accept a compensation in money or cattle.

The Monguls have some relicts among them of their ancient pre-eminence.— They have schools for teaching their children, not only the common parts of education, but likewise geography, history, astronomy, medicine, and theology: and they have written books of laws. Their code is very favourable to women, who are considered by them as incapable of any crime. Most of the Asiatics esteem the female sex in no other light, than as mere instruments of pleasure, and as a kind of human dolls, for men to play withall.—

Even those Tartars who permit their ladies to accompany them to the other world, mean it only for their own pleasure—they do not bring them before Radamanthus : their women, like their cattle, are only a part of their equipage on the journey.

The domestic animals of the Kalmucs are Camels, Horses, Cows, Sheep, and Goats : they have neither Swine nor Poultry. Their Horses, besides the purpose of riding, serve them in all respects as Cows. They are fond of Mare's milk. Horse's flesh is a delicacy with them ; so that upon any expedition, they are in no danger of wanting food, as every Tartar leads one or two spare Horses : they need not wag-gons to convey their provisions, they contrive to make their provisions carry themselves. The fleetness of their Horses, in their frequent marches, gives them the preference to all other animals, with those hordes ; and a man of quality is therefore known by his numerous stud ; in some instances, as some will have it, to the number
of

of four thousand. The Camels are used for heavy burthens, and the great men likewise ride upon them in ordinary journeys, or when the tribes are removing to a new spot of land.

The women manage the œconomy within doors—the men look to every thing else. The exercises of the Kalmucs are manly, and consist in shooting with the bow, and wrestling. They are fond, too, of singing, but the performance is with the females. In addition to the specimens of their songs already given, take the following. The subject is a lamentation for a dying lover.

THE MAID.

Thy reddish bay horse
Falls languishing on the banks of the river Sall !
Thou fallest, courageous youth---thou that art mine ;
To thee the Moon will be a stedfast companion.

THE DYING YOUTH.

The Eagle's feather that is stuck in my hair
Take from me, and carry it to my friends :

Ah !

Ah! when you deliver it, so do it that their tender
hearts

Be not smitten with anguish at hearing the doleful
news :

And let them the golden-lettered Schodba*
Order to be read for twelve long years for me.

THE MAID.

Prince of my heart, fall'n in the bloody field,
Cover'd with dust and gore : the Moon will yield }
A social beam, and gild his broken shield.
His gen'rous Steed, in anguish for the slain,
Lies near his corps, where Sall winds thro' the plain.

THE DYING LOVER.

Ah! hear my last, this last request, my Fair!
The Eagle's feather, that adorns my hair,
Bear to my friends, and when you give it, say,
" He died a hero, glory led the way !"
'Tear not their bosoms with sad tales of woe,
How the keen arrow struck the deadly blow ;
Nor echo to their souls my dying groans,
For my disturbed shade will hear their moans.
Tell them to read, for twelve long years, for me, }
The golden-letter'd book, in memory,
Then shall I softly rest amidst eternity!

The

* Schodba is a sort of mass for the dead, written in letters of gold.

The subjects of their songs are, in general, the fabulous stories of gigantic chivalry, heroic tales, and amorous ditties. Their musical instruments are, the lute, the violin, and the pipe: they likewise amuse themselves with playing at chess, and cards.

Funeral ceremonies are strictly observed by all the Tartars. The most honourable manner of reducing the body to dust, according to the notions of the Kalmucs, is that of burning. They have an idea, too, that such purification by fire, procures admission for the soul directly into Paradise.

The Tongusians are partly under the Government of China, and partly under that of Russia. Their character is a medium betwixt the proud ostentatious Kalmuc, and the common tribes addicted to pilfering, and other low vices. The Tongusian nation are divided into two classes—the shepherds, and the huntsmen. Their rugged

rugged country affords good opportunity for the chase, and plenty of game to induce them to make hunting a business.— The Kalmuc country is flat, and without wood; the Kalmucs, therefore, hunt but for amusement, and that seldom. The Tongusian huntsman considers the shepherd's life as effeminate, and unworthy of men: he strings his bow, hangs his quiver at his back, and climbs the mountain's side, smiling at the folly of his less active countrymen, in depriving themselves of that health and vigour which the pursuit of the Wolf and the Bear gives to him. Few of the Tartar or northern nations are now distinguished for their hardy manner of life.

The Tongusian huntsman prides himself upon his sobriety, as well as upon his athletic exercises. He calls the shepherd luxurious, who indulges in drinking a spirit drawn from four milk. The shepherds are more wealthy than the huntsmen, and more at their ease. Ease and wealth have
ever

ever occasioned luxury, and here we see it in its infancy. The shepherds do not expose themselves to cold, like the huntsmen; but the huntsmen are warmer, by exercise, than the others, even with the aid of brandy—brandy, which is as dangerous a substitute for warmth or exercise, as opium for rest. Scurvy, the common disease of northern climates, is not known among the Tongusian huntsmen, until old age prevents them from undergoing their usual fatigue. Even their want of cleanliness, does not bring this calamity, until their bodies and their minds are no longer kept in motion. Scurvy is the constant attendant of laziness and dirtiness; and wherever it is found, the other two qualities are not far removed.

The Tongusian huntsman, while he presents the finest character to be found in Tartary, is an evidence against the imposition of those excuses that are made for drunkenness.—They retain health and strength of body to the latest period of their
ex-

existence. They detest every thing mean or dishonourable—are as jealous of any reflection upon their good name, as the most polite nations, and, like them, decide all disputes of this nature by duel, shooting, the one at the other, with arrows. They formerly fought in presence of the elders, but now the Russian Government have forbid such encounters, and the men of honour retire to settle their disputes in other countries. Their noble families, too, are as high-mettled as any in Europe.---The brothers are guardians of their sister's reputation, and should a lady of birth be imprudent, the lover must marry her, if of equal rank; if not, her brother shoots him, without further ceremony. The women are treated with the greatest respect and tenderness; and, in return, they are the most affectionate wives; so that at the death of their husbands, they are not to be prevented, without difficulty, from killing themselves. The young women make a present to their intended husbands, of a dress, as a specimen of their sewing. The
 women

women are the musical performers, upon all occasions. The Russian males contend in this art with the females: but as the Russians are a brave people, we cannot conclude that music is an effeminate amusement. Nature would seem to have hesitated whether to make the Russians a nation of Warriors, or Nightingales, and, in hesitating, she made them both.

LETTER XXX.

*The Russian Amusements upon May-Day---
The Approach of Summer.*

Ingria, May, 1789.

IN this country of Scythia, I imagine myself a thousand years old, and nearly related to Odin. I consider you as one of my posterity, and myself as writing to you, from my tomb in the Desert of Tartary. I feel a crust of antiquity gathering round me. The wild scene of woods and uncultivated tracts presented to the view, keeps up the dream of ancient times.—When I cast my eye towards Petersburg, the vision, in part, dissolves; but as the country of Witches is in the neighbourhood, a little farther stretch of imagination can make this emporium appear the effect of enchantment. It is with difficulty

culty I can reconcile myself, after wandering through Tartary, and stirring up the ashes of Gods and Heroes, to recur to the common tales of travellers, and to inform you what the Russians are now about.

This is May-Day, and all the world are assembled at Catherinburg, and hailing, with joy, the return of Summer, after a Winter of six months. The earth, lately buried in snow, appears as rising from the dead---the white covering, or winding-sheet, is lying around in fragments. Upon one hand I hear the singing of birds; upon the other, the rending of the ice.---The Gulph of Finland, upon whose shore Catherinburg is situated, is still a frozen field. The Russians are making merry in the woods surrounding Catherinburg---drinking, singing, and smoking, in tents erected for this particular day. Every chaise, and single horse chair, is parading the streets of Catherinburg. I regret much that the Russians have no other place more

proper than this, for celebrating so joyous an anniversary: yet the empire is not limited by such narrow boundary!—the adjacent country not so fertile or cultivated as to forbid the appropriation of a more extensive and elegant place of public resort. I detest extravagance in private works---I detest æconomy in public ones.

LETTER XXXI.

Russian Summer---Anecdotes of Prince Nassau---Of Paul Jones---Princess Daschkoff---Count Besborodko---Russian Dances---Russian Amusements in Summer.

Ingria, June, 1789.

I HAVE retired from the bustle of the metropolis to the country. My hut is in the neighbourhood of the Russian and Finland villages: each rural sight, each rural sound. I go out every morning, to fish in a river which runs through the woods, and I seldom dine without having a dish of my own providing at table. So much for industry. The Russian girls, who are gathering berries in the forests, entertain me with their songs; and in return, I purchase their collection of wild fruits.

Winter has hardly disappeared, when all the earth is dressed in her finest liveries. The fir tree alone retains his garb at all seasons, and keeps his shaggy coat in the cold weather, in common with the Bear and Wolf, who dwell under her branches. The quick transition of the season is most distinguishable in the birch forests: not many days ago, they were naked and shivering; they are now new clothed in light green, and make a beautiful contrast with the dark hue of the pine. Earth's verdant carpet is spread over every plain. There is neither hill, nor mountain, nor rock, nor cataract, to bring into my description of the Russian Spring. The last Winter was uncommonly severe, and it is succeeded by a Summer extremely hot. The sun-beams are almost unsufferable. I plunge into the river to cool myself: but the Russians do not follow my example, until they have parboiled their bodies in the vapour bath. This climate is a trying one for any constitution: the Russians make it worse, by their ridiculous practices. The field of ice
upon

upon the Gulph only broke up a few days ago, notwithstanding the great heat from the middle of April last. The farmer was plowing and sowing, in his shirt, upon land, while Winter still bound the ocean, in his sight!

A new scene opens: the sea is covered with ships: I hear the thunder of the Russian fleet at Cronstadt, whose harbour appears a wood of masts. The village where I reside in the country, is situated about half way between Peterburg and Cronstadt, and near the shore of the gulph. I view the vessels hourly passing and re-passing, laden with the rich produce of the empire, or carrying to the capital the luxuries of other nations. No traveller, either going from, or coming into Russia, can pass me unobserved. I was here for a few days in April last, when Prince Nassau arrived to take command of the Galley Fleet. He is a fine-looking man, and has already approved himself, at least, a brave Officer. The instant of his arrival, he

sent his servant to the Postmaster, to enquire if the report was true of Admiral Paul Jones being dismissed from the Russian service. The Prince does not admire his late colleague in the Black Sea expedition. Indeed this newly-created Admiral is universally despised, and must, of course, soon retire. I had the honour of seeing this hero lately: he dined at the post-house, with his doxy, upon a trip of pleasure from Petersburg. He has nothing remarkable in his figure. I should not have noticed him, had he not been pointed out to me. He did not know that the post-house and tavern was kept by an Englishman. The Admiral ordered his dinner in bad French; he was answered in English, and he started backwards. "What," said he to the Master of the house, "you are
 "an Englishman! how did you know
 "that I was of that country?" Prince Nassau has a something about him which immediately interests you. It is not necessary to be informed that he is a man of distinction. The Prince neglected to give
 his

his passport to the Postmaster. The Postmaster desired the Prince's servant to ask it from him, as he could not order horses for his carriage, however satisfied he was of his identity and errand to Russia, until he saw a regular passport for his entry. The servant replied, " that he had asked the Prince for it once, and that his Master would of himself deliver the passport, without being again put in mind of it, which he would not venture to do, unless he wished to have his head broken !"

We expect soon to hear of an engagement; the Russian galley fleet, with that of Sweden. The weather continues very hot. A Captain of a British East-India ship, who is just now travelling here, says, " that he never felt himself more incommoded with heat at Bengal, than he does now at Petersburg." It is even dangerous to strangers to walk out at mid-day, so powerful are the sun's rays. The very woods have taken fire in some parts of Ingria. There has been no rain for se-

veral weeks : the grafs fields are burnt up, and the grain is ripening upon ſtraw, not one foot in length. The river in which I fiſh, I am afraid will be dried up. In the evening, at ſun-ſet, vaſt ſwarms of gnats, or muſquitos, ariſe from the top of the foreſts, darkening the air. It is a proof of the extreme heat, when thoſe infects, hatched in the ſun-beams, dare not to venture out ſooner. They come at this late hour to ſip the dew, which then aſcends from the earth, in a white miſt. I go out in the morning at three, and four o'clock, to fiſh or to bathe : I am driven in again at fix, by the ſultry ſkies. I ſeek the ſhade, and exclaim with Virgil,

O quis me gelidis in vallibus Hæmi

Siftat, et ingenti ramorum protegat umbra !

This gentleman has given us a picture of the Scythian Winter, but he forgot the Scythian Summer. I put on my trouſers, and take my walk in the evening, in defiance of the myriads of gnats. As I wander near the Monastery of St. Sergius, by
the

the sea shore, while the last knell warns the Monks to prayers and rest, the Nightingale serenades me with his song. Perhaps a drunken Russian, reeling along the road, disturbs the sweet syren with his bellying noise. The bird renews his note, when the Hottentot has passed. A fine finger, or a fine orator never presses you to hear them, and they only oblige you if you attend in respectful silence.

I have my concert of vocal and instrumental music, at the post-house, every Sunday. A Russian has made for himself a kind of harp; and his wife, Daphne, plays a little upon the guittar: but this guittar is cracked in the back, and most part of the music makes its escape the wrong way: however, the lady compensates for this, by the excellence of her voice---such as you have heard chanting the Babes of the Wood, or Chevy Chase. We had lately an assembly: two Finland girls performed a Rus Dance, and trotted about, to the great entertainment of the
bearded

bearded spectators. All the Russian dances are a kind of pantomime. The dancers are more studious of the management of their eyes and hips, than of their feet.--- They endeavoured to convey the most wanton ideas. One of the girls acted the man's part, and threw very amorous glances upon *his* mistress; who, in her turn, blushed and languished. The Cossac Dance was rehearsed by the house-lackey and the Parson's son of the parish. This is a challenge dance: the one strives to exceed the other in the execution of a variety of steps and leaps, which they perform alternately. The dancers, in all these dances, while they perform their different attitudes and steps, make the figure of a circle.

A few days ago, as I was attending the concert, Madam Shirbinin, daughter of the Princess Daschkoff, entered the room, with several ladies and gentlemen. Madam Shirbinin speaks English very well: she has been formerly in England. This Princess would go a fishing: I gave her my
rods

rods and lines. She was returning from Cronstadt, where she had been to take farewell of her husband, who is gone with the galley fleet. Monsieur Shirbinin is a Brigadier-General in the Army. Several regiments have embarked with Prince Nassau. His Excellency Count Besborodko, Prime Minister of Russia, with Prince Kourakin, and other Princes and Nobles of the empire in company, dined here.—The Count has raised himself to this eminent station by real merit and ability, which are the only recommendations to Catherine II.

We are daily visited from Petersburg, by the first ranks. I cannot get into, or out of my room, without brushing against her Imperial Majesty's Orders of St. George and St. Andrew; and have sometimes the honour of playing at billiards with a Knez. The roads are crowded with the Summer carriages of the gentry, called Troskys: they are of a more elegant construction than those used by the common people. A
double

double row of seats is placed length-ways, upon a low carriage with four wheels; over this is placed a canopy of silk or other stuff, with curtains to draw occasionally, at the sides and at the ends, in case of rain or dust. This sort of carriage is very convenient, and light: it is easily drawn by two, but the Russian gentry are fond of splendour, and they have generally four or six horses to their carriages, with a corresponding number of livery-men. The company sit in two rows, and with their backs to those upon the opposite side; but when there is room, the Russian and German beauties recline themselves in soft attitudes along the seats. They are fond of displaying their charms in the open air. The present dry season collects the dust around them: they look like Angels in the clouds.

The country houses of the Nobility are placed close upon the public road: their noble inhabitants entertain themselves in tents erected under the trees, if there be
any

any adjoining: here they drink their coffee, and the ladies employ their hours in needle-work, or other amusements. I observed female Turks attending upon these companies, and likewise riding with their new Mistresses, in their carriages. The Russian ladies treat them with great tenderness, and seem very fond of the daughters of Oczakow. Their gardens are in better taste than their houses: and, notwithstanding the dead flatness of the land, Nature is copied with much exactness. The Nobility invite the Public, in Summer, to their gardens, where they are entertained with music, sailing in boats upon the artificial lakes, fire works, &c. in a magnificent manner. I was last Sunday in the gardens of his Excellency M. Narischkin. There was an assemblage of the first rank, as well as of the lower orders, who gain admittance, if decently clean in their apparel. The musicians were disposed in a grove of trees: the music had a fine effect, and seemed to ascend from the earth. It adds nothing to the pleasure
 derived

derived from sounds, to view the distorted features of the performers. An orchestra should have a curtain drawn before it : the sight of bob wigs, powdered tops, and crooked noses, add nothing to the pleasure which we derive from music. If the performers must appear, let them be dressed somewhat more like the disciples of Apollo. I cannot with any temper behold Handel taking snuff, screwing his pins, or rosinning his fiddle-stick : it gives the idea of the manufacture of music, as well as of tobacco. These observations are not applicable to vocal performers : a singer is an orator of harmony ; and good figure and gesture are requisite in an orator. Any one who has seen and heard a beautiful woman sing, will confess that the sight gives new pleasure to the hearing.

Amidst the sports of dance and song,
 I forget the bloody field of war---and I
 wish to forget it. The Russians are following up their victories over the Turks, with heavier and heavier blows. The unfortunate

fortunate war with Sweden is prosecuted with unequal success on both sides. The grand fleet and galley fleet are both at sea, and we expect, daily, important intelligence. I will not entertain you with the vague accounts I may receive of battles and sieges. Have patience until I can with certainty give you a true and connected narrative.

LETTER XXXII.

Character of Peter the Great---Russian Nobility---Reflections upon Modern Luxury, as it regards Commerce and Arts---Picture of Modern Russia.

Ingria, July, 1789.

I TAKE my morning's walk in the gardens of the Palace of Strelina Myfa, now in ruins. Peter begun this palace, and his daughter, the Empress Elizabeth, continued the building, but died before it was finished. While I sit upon a broken column, a thousand thoughts rush into my mind. Peter meant to adorn the dreary shores of the Finland Gulph leading to his capital, with imperial mansions. The palaces of Oranienbaum, Peterhoff, and
Strelina,

Strelina, are evidently a part of this plan. The appearance of the opposite shore of Carelia, destitute of such ornaments, sets off those improvements, in the light of contrast.

I can trace upon the banks of the river where I fish, the outlines of gardens.--- Wherever I see a straight avenue, I know that Peter has been here, and has cut some of the trees formerly growing where I now walk, with his own hand. You may easily imagine that I feel myself a foot higher, in walking in a path which has been cleared for me by an Emperor ! I am attached to Russia and to Russians---not from any superior excellence in the natives : they are loaded with vices, as much as their other brothers of Europe, but because they are the children of Peter I. As a proof of my friendship for them, I will tell them freely of their faults. Peter did every thing with the axe and the sword---they were his only instruments in war and in peace : he fixed himself upon the Throne

Y

with

with them: he conquered the finest provinces of Sweden: he built and peopled his metropolis: he built and manned his navy: he established an Academy of Sciences with these towels, by seizing the library at Mittau:---all this as a warrior and legislator. We wish we had not to add, that unlike a father, he corrected his own children with them! In the Academy there is a figure of Peter in wax: it would have been more characteristic in iron. There is in the same collection a bar of iron forged by his Majesty's own hand. This is a better remembrancer of him.---Yes, Peter! you manufactured other articles in the iron branch, racks, wheels, and impalling hooks, with stains upon them that time will not efface.

No am'rous Hero ever gave thee birth,
 Or ever tender Goddess brought thee forth:
 Some rugged rock's hard entrails gave you form,
 And raging seas produc'd you in a storm.
 A birth well suiting thy tempestuous kind,
 So rough thy manners, —————

P. H.

You

You see I can rail at my favourite Prince. Great actions should not make us forget the cause of humanity ; and however necessary his severities might be, yet they were too inhumanly dear a sacrifice, even to procure the reformation of his people ; which, perhaps, time might have accomplished, without so high a price of blood. Peter I. was anxious to make his native kingdom a great nation : he was rendered miserable by their opposition to his plans, their cabals and conspiracies against him ; and in fits of despair, or rather of madness, he did things unbecoming his character. The works of this Prince were of a solid and lasting nature. If he oppressed his subjects, it was but for a time, and his object was, to bring them in the end peace and ease. The event would soon prove the sterling value of his plans, did the Nobles and Gentry attend to the improvement of agriculture, and cease to copy the extravagant follies of the rest of Europe, at least until their country be in the same state of improvement. The revenues of

the Russian Nobles and Gentlemen, as they now are, could support all their ancient grandeur: but were their incomes ten times greater than at present, they would not answer the demands of modern extravagance. The ancient robes, covered with gold and silver, were but one expence to a family for generations: they were delivered from the father to the son with the estate. An heir of these days would laugh at his father for such a legacy. The monster, Fashion, created for a scourge to mankind, has occasioned every evil which infects the age: inconstancy in dress and diet, have, besides the daily and weekly renewing of expence, fostered the same inconstancy in our minds and actions. If the common people of Russia would only part with their beards I should be happy to find them persisting in their simplicity of dress: nor have I much objection even to the beard, if it were not an enemy to cleanliness. It is not so much Russia that requires sumptuary laws; all classes in other European nations are plunged

plunged in misery by modern expences, which lay them open to conduct unworthy of men. Were the legislators of Europe to make sumptuary laws, and enforce their obedience, a greater reform would ensue than from any other laws whatever. Gustavus III. of Sweden has shewn the worthy example, and his kingdoms will derive more advantages from those sumptuary laws, than from any war he can ever enter into.

Commercial nations will urge, that the consumption of the various articles of fashion, employ a number of people: that changeability of fashion, and love of distinction in society is the nursery of arts, commerce, and all the improvements of life: this is so far true--and the nursery, too, of improvements in modern crimes and vices. If extravagance and fashion nourish crimes while they nourish commerce--if an equal number of people are rendered miserable, to those who are employed and maintained by them---might it not be prudent to

check what is allowed, even by the advocates of fashion, to be the origin of these evils? Might it not be prudent to look around us, and endeavour to find out some less dangerous supports for commerce, and for the people?

When agriculture has increased and arrived at such perfection, that nothing more can be expected from it in regard to commerce; and when there are people which agriculture and its productions cannot employ in useful and elegant manufactures, then, and then only, it might be proper to employ the people in whatever manufactures might tend to this purpose: but, until this period arrives, it is surely wrong to augment our commerce by luxury and vice, which, at least should only be our last resource. Let us first try how far commerce can be augmented and supported by industry, which does not depend upon vice, before we adopt vices and luxury as the sole pillars of the industry and prosperity of mankind. Commerce should certainly be looked upon as in its zenith,

zenith, when all the people are fully employed and comfortably provided for : those advocates for commerce who do not stop here, will stop no where. China holds up an illustrious picture, how far agriculture and the productions of agriculture are capable of employing myriads of people, independent of foreign commerce. Let us improve upon this plan and example, and reject only such articles of foreign commerce as do not employ our own manufacturers : or let commerce and manufactures remain entirely free, and the vices and extravagancies of the wealthy have full play as usual. I shall only propose one sumptuary law to prevent the private vices of the rich from infecting the Public, by at first recommending, and gradually enforcing a *national dress*. I esteem dress the principal origin of luxury and vice. The higher ranks only can indulge in various other expences, but every class is ruined by the little ambition for dress---in every person's eye, and more or less in every person's reach. A national dress would

soon be followed by numberless benefits. Many of the lower, and nearly all of the middling classes of the people would save one-fourth part of their present incomes : their families would be better maintained and more independent. Fewer crimes would be committed. It is not so much against great crimes or expences we have to guard; mankind, naturally, of themselves shrink at both. There is an œconomy as well as innocence in nature. It is against those deluding easy steps that lead to crimes, to luxury and ruin, that our attention ought to be directed. It is not so much against those vices and luxuries which men commit and indulge in private, as against those public follies that draw them imperceptibly to private recesses !

Our commerce will equally flourish, notwithstanding this sumptuary law, or at *worst*, be only lopped of some rotten though gilded branches. Let our Merchants and Manufacturers import and export whatever they can find sale for, and if they do
not

not find sale at last for ingenious, useless commodities, they will be under the necessity of getting rich in a more reasonable manner. Increased agriculture will increase population, which will find additional, though perhaps not new employment to our Merchants and Manufacturers.

With respect to the Fine Arts, this sumptuary law can in no way prevent their increasing perfection ; but on the contrary. I can neither agree that private vices are public benefits, or that Fashion is the source of rational improvement, since daily examples shew us, that taste, as well as virtue is frequently excluded by Fashion. The higher ranks of the nation, while they exhaust their fortunes, for the benefit of many, that many becoming rich, become vicious likewise, by the example of their employers. I will ask, what arts have been improved by Fashion ? Not Architecture, nor Painting, nor Sculpture, nor History, nor Poetry ; because the profes-

fors

fors of those arts, are the most celebrated who model after the Ancients, assisted by native taste and genius. The arts which have improved under the patronage of Fashion, are embroidering patterns for dress: the method of manufacturing cloth so as to starve the wearers; hair-powder, pomatums, washes, and innumerable other articles, which no doubt give employment to numbers. The manufacture of necessary articles might nearly employ an equal number of people, seeing that many unnecessary manufactures are often substituted for the others. The remainder would find abundant employment in the cultivation of waste lands, which are very extensive, even in the Island of Britain. But as numbers have learned to lean upon our vices for subsistence, no rapid change is recommended---let the people be gradually taught to lean upon our virtues.

Fashion diverts the channel of wealth, to the nurture of every frivolous art, and from the roots of real industry and elegance.

gance. The professors of the elegant arts find them the least lucrative. The enthusiast, ever attendant on genius, keeps them in existence, not the powerful patronage they experience. The wealth of individuals is devoted to riot and folly; the wealth of nations, exhausted by their Princes, in schemes of wild ambition.—Genius and arts find no encouragement, unless they prostitute themselves, to please and flatter a vitiated race: and that they are now finding increased encouragement, is, I am afraid, no proof of their improvement, of the taste of the age, or of the benefits derived from luxury or fashion. Modern nations have examples, from the histories of remote ages, and of mighty empires, what sort of benefits were derived from private vices! Private vices multiplied by contagious example; all became vicious and effeminate, and their empires tumbled in ruins. From those ruins, not only our Architects and Painters are taught, but the Prince and the Philosopher.

I con-

I consider Russia as an immense landscape, in the fore-ground of which appears the statue of Peter the Great, and the living figure of Catherine II. Immediately around is that small assembly of the nation, which their joint efforts have brought forward into life, and to civilization. I am offended at their gaudy show and decorations: they form a contrast, degrading to that multitude of peasantry which I see behind them, among the woods, and upon the plains, cloathed in the coarsest skins of beasts, ignorant of arts and sciences. Do the higher ranks wish to invite the mob to come forward, by that glitter of gold and silver upon their vestments, the elegance of their carriages, and their superb palaces? Do they wish the boors to quit the vices of ignorance, and adopt the vices of luxury in their place? Would it not be as well, if their Lords would show them an example of industry and œconomy; and at first, by training a few peasants upon their several estates, as farmers, spread the ardour for useful knowledge? It might
be

be time enough, too, when their revenues are increased by industry, to reap the fruits of it; and the fruits of industry are simple elegance; not vicious ease, nor the indulgence of vicious passions. The Nobles will do well to take the example from that Emperor, whose name they glory in, and give it to their peasants. Catherine II. has done wrong in admitting too much finery into her system of civilization. Peter taught only the more vulgar, but more useful arts to a nation in the first stage of society. It is not the best way to obtain a hearing of the great, to inform them of their faults; yet, if I had an opportunity of speaking to Her Imperial Majesty, I would demonstrate the ill consequences of luxurious habits; and that it will require a longer struggle to bring back the Nobility, than it will to bring forward the rest of her subjects to the state they ought to be in. The task of Peter I. was easy, in comparison with what any attempts of the Kings of many European nations would be, to prevail with the higher ranks
of

of the people to relinquish their effeminacy. To reform barbarians, is only to work in paste rather hard; but to reform luxury, is to cure a leper. While Catherine II. is the patron of every solid improvement in arts, agriculture, and commerce, empty show and idle magnificence are not checked.

LETTER XXXIII.

*The Arrival of a Russian Regiment from Oc-
zakow at Petersburg, under the Command
of an English Officer---Anecdotes of one of
the young Grand Dukes---Of Princess
Nassau---Of Captain Bentinck, of the Bri-
tish Navy----Of a Portuguese Colonel---
Of Lord Wycombe, Mr. Howard, and his
Excellency Mr. Whitworth.*

Ingria, July, 1789.

AT two o'clock this morning, while still
silence reigned, or was disturbed only by
the rustling leaves of trees, my ears were
suddenly struck with martial music. As
the public way leads by the river, on the
banks of which I strayed with my fishing-
rod, I soon perceived a regiment of sol-
diers, upon their march to the capital. It
has

has come from Oczakow, and is commanded by an Englishman. I left off work, and marched along with them, making inquiries at the Officers of their adventures in the land of Mahomet. This regiment had suffered much in the attack of that city. It consists of a very fine body of men:—they were all dressed in white jackets, and trowsers of linen, for the conveniency of marching in such sultry weather. Colonel Fanshaw arrived some days since, with his family. His little son, a boy not exceeding ten years of age, has already bled in the field of Mars: he was wounded at the siege of Oczakow, at an earlier period than when Alexander mounted first his war horse, or Charles XII. of Sweden had heard the glorious whistle of a cannon ball.—This young hero has been nursed in the mouth of a cannon: his father takes him with him in all his expeditions. The Eagle teaches her brood to fly in the face of the sun, to accustom their eyes to bear its fiercest beams.

At

At the post-house, people of every nation arrive daily. I mix with the croud, to gain intelligence. Three smart French wenches came lately from Cronstadt, attended by their gallant, Monsieur le Capitaine de Flotte: one of them came close up to me, singing very prettily. "Monsieur," said she—"Is there no chaise to be had?"

"No, Madam," replied I, "there is no other sort than what you see in the yard; travellers in this country generally make use of such." They were small waggons, filled with straw. There was no help for it. "Mon Dieu!" said the girl, and directly jumped into the vehicle, reclining her handsome person among the litter. So the three French Filles de Chambre, and Monsieur le Capitaine, packed into two straw baskets, made their triumphal entry into Petersburg.

With what good grace and good nature do these French accommodate themselves

to every circumstance of life; while we, sulky Britons, growl at froward Fortune, and are aukward in all our motions! Foreigners smile when they see a plain honest Englishman make a bow in a wrong place, or more commonly at his not making a bow at all. We never yet could acquit ourselves at the foot and hat exercise!

One of the young Grand Dukes, a youth about nine years of age, seeing a Naval Officer passing through some of the apartments of the palace, asked who it was?—His Highness being told it was an English Officer of the Russian fleet, and a brother to a lady who has the care of the young Princesses, went to the lady to inquire about her brother. “This was your brother,” said the Prince, “and an Englishman? Is he a real genuine Briton?—Does he appear frightened when he enters a room where there is any company? Is he at a loss where to put his hat, when he is so polite as to take it off?” The lady assured his Highness, “that her brother was, in every respect, a true Englishman.”

The

The Princess Nassau has arrived at Petersburg. The young Princess arrived soon afterwards, and lodged at the post-house for one night. She is a beautiful young creature. When she arrived at the house, she ordered, as is usual for travellers of rank when they stop, her bed from the carriage: it was spread upon the floor of the parlour, and the Princess, fatigued with her long journey, lay down to repose at two o'clock in the afternoon. The windows of the parlour had no curtains nor shutters; so, when I imagined the lady would be asleep, I repaired to the window, and taking my pencil, attempted to portray a woman asleep, when they are said to be most lovely, and least noisy! Prince Nassau has already gained an important victory over the Swedish galleys. The good fortune of this hero, under the Russian banner, continues. Intelligence of this victory is just arrived, but I am not yet informed of the particulars.

Two Captains of the British Navy entered my room last night, in search of a
 Z 2 bed.

bed. They had come from Revel, where they had arrived from Denmark in a small open boat, and visited the Swedish and Russian Navy, in their passage. This is making very little of the dangerous navigation of the Baltic, notwithstanding this is the finest season of the year. The Baltic is, however, liable to storms at all seasons, and these gentlemen encountered one, which had nearly put an end to their voyage. Captain Bentinck is the name of one of the gentlemen: I forget the name of the other. A Portuguese Colonel is arrived here likewise, from Revel and Stockholm. The Colonel informed me, that he had made application to His Swedish Majesty for permission to go by way of Swedish Finland, the seat of war: but this was refused, lest some accident should befall him in a journey through two hostile armies. He is a gentleman, I understand, of great property in the Island of Madeira. At the expiration of his travels, he marries the young daughter of the

Chevalier

Chevalier de Pinto, late Ambassador to the Court of London from Portugal, and now Prime Minister of that kingdom. The Colonel speaks English very well: he informed me, that he had resided in London some years, and he spoke in raptures of our nation, making comparisons between it and the countries through which he had travelled. "But money," said the Colonel, "is more necessary in England than in other parts: it is true, one obtains for their cash every luxury and convenience, which cannot be had in other countries, in the same style, even for money."

Lord Wycombe, accompanied by Capt. Markham, has passed for the Russian metropolis. Russia begins now to make a part of the grand tour, and not the least curious or useful part of it. Mr. Howard is arrived at Petersburg, upon a tour of a different kind from every other---to pour oil and honey into the wounds of the unfortunate. His Excellency Mr. Whitworth,

with his Secretary, Mr. Frazer, were here to-day, and played together at Billiards. Mr. Whitworth resides within two miles of the post-house, at the country palace of Count Saltikoff, which he has for himself and suit during the Summer.

Our Ambassador is much and deservedly respected, notwithstanding the unaccountable breach between the two Courts of London and Petersburg. I call it unaccountable, because, in general, Courts that have been long in the habits of intercourse and friendship, do not in ordinary fall out where there is no opposition of interest: much less when peace and friendship are the interest of both parties.

LETTER XXXIV.

Summer Amusements in the Metropolis.---

The Imperial Family---The Public entertained at Count Strogonoff's Gardens.

St. Petersburg, August, 1789.

FROM my retirement, amidst woods and lakes, I have, after an absence of three months, returned to Petersburg. The city is still deserted by the Nobility and Gentry, who will not return from their country residence for some time, as the season continues remarkably pleasant, and it is seldom they enjoy such weather in August.

Her Imperial Majesty is arrived in the city from the Palace of Zarsko Zelo, for

Z 4

the

the Winter. A very numerous cavalcade attended her Majesty : the whole preceded by a party of Hussar Guards. Catherine stopped at the Casan Church : *Te Deum* was sung for the victories obtained over the enemies of the Empire. I stood very near this great Sovereign, and could not help noticing, that the pictures given of Catherine II. in some books of Travels, bear no resemblance to the original

Catherine II. is of a middle stature ; rather corpulent in her person ;—majestic in her deportment. This Empress has not only the art of appearing, but possesses the quality of being great. She seldom comes into public, even to the Theatre. The Spread Eagle over the empty box, facing the stage, points out where once her Majesty sat, and seems to point out too, that the bird is flown. The imperial palace in the city, and at Zarsko Zelo, have each of them private theatres for the entertainment of the Court, and others, who have interest enough to procure tickets, which are given

ven gratis. The Grand Duke, Paul Petrowitsch, is handsome in person, of a middle stature; and has something greatly good in his countenance. The Grand Dutchess is majestic both in her person and manner. The young Imperial Family are a group of lovely angels.

It is only within these few days that I have had any opportunity of observing the Russian diversions in town during the Summer. I find the citizens crowding every evening into the gardens of the Summer Palace upon the banks of the Neva. They are the St. James's Park of the Russians, and at this time a very delightful parade. Early this Summer I entered them for the first time, and in walking through one of the bird-cage avenues, I met the Bashaw of Oczakow, attended by several Turkish Officers. I stepped aside, and viewed with respect this illustrious prisoner; one of the guardians of the Crescent. He is treated here with a politeness

ness and attention due to his fidelity and courage, more than to his rank.

The garden belonging to the Cadet Corps is another resort for the better class of the inhabitants upon Sunday. Military music salutes the company from different parts of the gardens. This season provided a new military concert. In the wooden building erected in the midst of a small piece of water, a band of Turkish performers were placed. Was it fair to make the sons of Mahomet fiddlers to *infidel* conquerors? These late drummers and fifiers to the garrison at Oczakow, gave the Russians a most melancholy and grating tune for their pains. The Turks beat a sort of drum with one stick, and made a sort of whistle produce melodies, resembling the notes of a young pig, when its ears are sharply pinched. The Russian drum and fife, the bassoon and clarionet, relieved at intervals my organs, and brought into order my sense of hearing, which was distracted with the Ottoman Oratorio.

The

The young Cadets, dressed in white or brown, agreeable to their ages, walked round the gardens, preceded by their Masters—the youngest class, by the women of the nursery. Parties of the oldest are encamped in the environs of the city, during Summer, where they are taught their exercises, and particularly the management of the artillery. Hence, it has been long observed of the Russian army, that it is the best served in the world with artillery, and artillery Officers and Engineers. Peter I. carried always a moveable fortress with his army: at the battle of Pultowa he had eighty cannon: the Swedes had four or six field-pieces.

The Russians take as much delight in the firing of guns, as they do in ringing of bells. Artillery, in Summer, makes a part of rural entertainments. I was yesterday at one of the Summer Carnivals given by the Nobility to the Public. Count Strogonoff's villa and gardens are pleasantly situated, on one of the islands at the mouth
of

of the Neva, and bordering on this river. Here were collected a very great concourse of people of all ranks. In the front gallery of the Count's house were a chosen band of vocal and instrumental performers: the first consisted chiefly of boys and girls.—As we walked in the forests adjoining to the house, we were serenaded with favourite Russian airs. Dukes, Generals, Admirals, Traders, and Boors, mixed together. The tents, erected among the trees, received those guests, who conceived, with Sancho Pancha, that eating and drinking is the best part of all earthly enjoyments. I could see a select company of Germans, snugly seated; their ears attentive to the music—their eyes to some slices of ham, which the Master of the hotel was cutting for them.

Under a wooden pavillion, open at the sides, those who chuse to exercise their limbs, had a room railed in for dancing, and a band of musicians. Here the ladies of easy virtue, and the virtuous maiden,
dressed

dressed in her Sunday gown, tripped about;
 to the great entertainment of the titled
 spectators. Few join in this assembly be-
 sides the lower ranks; but the outside of
 the rail was crowded with ladies and gen-
 tlemen of the first distinction.

A sky-rocket gave notice that the fire-
 works were begun. The assembly broke
 up: the fiddlers and the dancers crowded
 together through the woods, to the open
 area before Count Stogonoff's villa. A ve-
 ry entertaining Greenwich Park scene, too,
 was exhibited, when Beaux and Belles,
 amidst a display of various fireworks, en-
 deavoured, in tumultuous throngs, to es-
 cape the falling fire-balls. The Count's
 windows and galleries accommodated his
 visitors of quality, among whom were dis-
 tributed the good things of this life. The
 Count has a great property, in iron mines,
 from which he derives a liberal income,
 and which he spends with equal liberality.
 This evening's amusement concluded with
 a ge-

a general discharge of the cannon from a battery upon the banks of the Neva.

The company now filed off towards Peterſburg, ſome in coaches, others in troſkies, which convey half a dozen or a dozen people. The foreſt echoed with the ſound of wheels and ſongs. Several Ruſſians had devoted the day to Bacchus, and were ſinging his praiſes, with all the ſtrength they had remaining. Their drunken ſongs are ſung in a different ſtrain from their ſober ditties, though the words and air may be the ſame. In the former, you hear a continued roar, for ſome moments, or minutes, as their breath may hold out; ſilence then ſucceeds for the ſame length of time, until they have recovered breath. When a drunken Ruſſian has finiſhed his firſt ſtanza and his breath, he reſts his head upon his ſhoulders, gaping for a freſh ſupply of æther: he recovers gradually, as from a fainting fit, and joins again the grand chorus of his friends. He who firſt recovers wind begins, and
the

the rest instantly accompany him, with what breath they have gathered. Many fall off from the trofky before the journey is ended ; but the song is not interrupted by these trifling accidents : there is always one or two in their seats, who keep the music alive : the driver stops the carriage, until his prostrate brothers replace themselves, but continues his song. Even the unfortunate, while they lie upon their back in the road, do not cease to perform their tasks in the concert.

In the Summer evenings, when the weather is calm, the citizens of Petersburg delight in sailing upon the Neva in their pleasure boats. The boats of the Nobility are very elegantly ornamented. The company are seated in the stern, under a canopy of silk, or other stuff, and have with them musicians, or frequently the party themselves perform upon different instruments. The rowers are all chosen among such of their servants as have the best voices, and either sing in concert with the
in-

instruments, or without them. When they have rowed the boat against the stream, beating time to their songs with the oars, they allow her to drive with the current, fixing their oars in a horizontal position from the boat's sides; and the rowers collect in a circle. It is at this period they exert their vocal powers, and make such exquisite harmony, as to draw the inhabitants to the galleries of their houses upon the river's banks, and the foot passengers to the water's edge, to listen to the music; and many follow the boat, to enjoy their native tunes. The vocal and instrumental parts are generally performed alternately, and among the former is always one, who, with a whistle, or, by blowing upon his fingers, makes a very shrill noise, accompanying the music at intervals. When the concert is ended, the audience upon the streets go away, repeating the songs, and echoing them into every quarter of the city. Perhaps another boat, conveying another concert,

cert approaches, and arrests the auditors of the first melodies.

These concerts often continue to ten and eleven o'clock at night, and when still silence reigns upon the face of the waters, it is beyond the power of description to convey any idea of the pleasing effect they have upon the mind.

Thus we spend the flowery months in Russia, notwithstanding war's alarms.

LETTER XXXV.

*Russian Climate----A Russian Wedding----
Anecdote of an old Russian Soldier---Of a
Band of Gypsies.*

Ingria, Sept. 1789.

THE season still continues remarkably mild and pleasant. If this good weather continue a little longer, I shall alter my opinion of the Russian climate. This last Summer has made us amends for the severe Winter of 1788-89. Ever since the middle of April, it has been hot and clear weather, without interruption, and without being accompanied with so much thunder as we might have naturally expected. The Gnats, or Musquitos, only venture abroad now in the day-time; the evening, when the sun is down, turns cold, and the month fast approaches when these plagues of

of man and beast will be frozen for nine months. The Gnat is succeeded in the business of tormenting animals, by the common Fly. It is chiefly in June and July that the Gnat is troublesome: the common Fly bites in August and September. The sting of the Gnat is hardly felt while they remain fixed upon your hands or legs; the pain is occasioned by the swelling afterwards. When the Gnat is fixed, it is better to allow it to take its belly full of blood, and go away. If it is killed upon the spot, some part of the proboscis frequently remains in the wound, and causes more acute pains than would be felt otherwise. Rubbing the wound likewise augments the torture. The Russian Gentlemen generally wear thin leather stockings under their silk ones, to defend them from those winged warriors. The bite of the common Fly is instantly attended with a sharp pain, but without any swelling. I dread them much more than I do the Gnats, whose wounds I can cure, without

A a 2

feeling

feeling uneasiness, by directly applying some lemon-juice, when the plunderer has left me. I wear Indian musquito trowsers, which are preferable to stockings of leather, not being so warm.

The Nobility have all gone into town, though a country residence is more delightful just now than at any time during the sultry months. But the Russian Almanacs have, no doubt, fixed the entry of frost and snow in September, and the Gentry will not trust in the flattering appearance of their skies.

I am a whimsical Briton, and have come again to visit woods and rivers, while the sun shines, and to enjoy the fragments of a Russian Summer, which the great folks despise.

I am told the Winter comes, in the latitude of Petersburg, with awful rapidity ; and that you take farewell of Summer at night, and hail the grim tyrant in the morn-

morning, who thunders around in a whirlwind, thickened with snow and icicles.—Let him come! I must see it and feel it; nor will I retreat, even before a Scythian Winter. Cronstadt is yet filled with British ships, which have a long stormy voyage to perform, before they can anchor upon their native shores. I have only two hours journey to go into the city, and into shelter. The British Shipmasters call at the house I lodge at, in their way from Cronstadt to Petersburg, as they generally come over land, after passing from Cronstadt to Oranienbaum. There are now several of them in the parlour, making merry. I tell them to hasten their departure—mention the dangers of a late passage home—and press upon their recollection the risk of having their vessels frozen in the harbour of Cronstadt. In reply, they call for another bottle, taking notice of the late period at which they had sailed from Russia in former years.

We have a wedding in the post-house: the Shipmasters take a peep at the bride,

and swear that she is a good piece ; adding many sea phrases illustrative of her beauties, and of the happiness of the bridegroom. The bride is the daughter of one of the Officers of the Posts, the bridegroom is a Chorister from one of the churches at St. Petersburg.

I went with the company to the Church of St. Sergius, to behold the Russian ceremonies, at the altar of Hymen. The young couple kissed every Saint within the walls, crossing themselves opposite to each. The Priest having made several gestures and grimaces, joined their hands and kissed them. This was the signal for an universal attack upon the lips of all present. I hid myself in a corner, in order to avoid the disagreeable encounter of long beards : however, I soon recollected there was no occasion for this precaution. The Russians permit foreigners to behold every religious ceremony without demanding any outward respect or attention, either to Priest or People, further, than remaining uncovered

uncovered and silent. The bride, from the time she had yielded consent, to the day of her nuptials, was attended in her hut by two such virgins as herself, who continued singing with her from morning to night for two or three weeks. If she paid a visit in the neighbourhood, the attendant nymphs, singing as they went along, accompanied her. The bride's acquaintance, male and female, enter the hut during this festival, making what presents they are able to bestow, and in return they are at liberty to kiss the bride and bride-maids, who entertain them with songs into the bargain. Our Cook, in the course of his visits, has fallen a sacrifice to the blue eyes of one of the bride-maids; but she piques herself upon her family connections, and has refused the poor fellow: she says, she is the Empress's slave, and that the Cook is only the slave of a private gentleman!

The wedding folks at their return from church, assembled in one of the rooms of

the Post-House, and Apollo and Daphne, of whom I have formerly made honourable mention, performed upon this, as they usually do upon every great occasion. The bridegroom taking his bride by the hand, led the dance. This ended, he entertained us with his songs: and it is but justice to say, that he sung like a Nightingale.

It was formerly a custom in Russia, nor has it yet become wholly obsolete, for the friends of the young couple, soon after they had retired to rest, to inquire if the marriage articles were completely ratified. I do not know whether or not this question was asked upon the present occasion. The bride of herself declared, next morning, with the tear in her eye, that she had been cheated! and that her husband was good for nothing but for singing hymns. The bridegroom looked very silly. A Monk, his acquaintance, who came with the chorister from Petersburg, declared, that he was a very good kind of a man, and that
he

he had lent him thirty rubles to bear the expence of the wedding dinner. The Fathers have, perhaps, sent abroad this Syren to charm a few birds into their net !

The watchman at the Post-Office, is an old soldier of 80 years of age. He tells us of the engagements in which he had fought, in the war with Prussia, in the reign of the Empress Elizabeth. This veteran was lately found in the wood, in amorous dalliance with the Gardener's wife, whom he had debauched from the paths of virtue with a bottle of Russian brandy. The other servants dogged the turtles to their nest, stripped the sheep-skin from the warrior's back, carried it to the nearest Spirit-Shop, and pawned it for brandy ; to which mulct, offenders against the laws of chastity, among the rural nymphs and swains, are liable in Russia.

In my walks, a few days ago, I encountered with a band of Gypsies, the first I had seen in this country. The females, as usual,

usual, offered for a small gratuity, to scan the secrets of fate and futurity. There were several beautiful girls journeying bare-footed with the Caravan, an itinerant Beggar's Opera. I had seen a party of this Squadron at some distance, at the window of a Finlander's hut, and heard them earnestly intreating the landlady to give them bread and salt. The landlady remained obdurate, and the prayers of the Gypsies were changed into curses. I entered the same hut, and procured some milk. The woman of the house told me that she was daily plagued with those people; that she gave them sometimes bread in Summer; but that the long Winter was now approaching, and, having a large family, she could not spare any thing from her store of provisions.

LETTER XXXVI.

Naval Campaign, 1789---Naval Engagement of the Russian and Swedish Galley Fleets---Of the Russian and Swedish Grand Fleets in the Baltic---Expedition of a Squadron of the Russian Fleet, under Captain Trevenen, an English Officer, to the Coast of Swedish Finland---Folly of the Northern Powers in keeping such large Fleets---Campaign in Finland.

St. Petersburg, Jan. 1790.

I WOULD, before this time, have given you some account of the battles between Russia and Sweden, in the course of last Summer ; but as there have been none, I found it difficult to draw up a history of them. As I cannot, therefore, give an account of what the warring hosts have done,

I will

I will endeavour to entertain you with a narrative of what they have not done.

Prince Nassau arrived in April last, to take upon him the command of the Russian galley fleet. I was present at the launching of a number of galleys and xebecs at Petersburg, which formed a part of this flotilla. They sailed for the mouth of the river Kymen, where the Swedish galleys had retired, being much inferior in both number and force,

The Swedish vessels lay near to the river, defended from the sea by numerous small islands, betwixt whom there were only two narrow passages for the Russians to enter.

Prince Nassau and the Chevalier de Litta, a Knight of Malta, led on the grand division of the Russian galleys and gunboats, by one of the passages; and M. Bally, a Russian Officer, a small squadron of frigates and xebecs, by the other. M. Bally having arrived at his station before the

the Prince's squadron, whose number retarded their motion in those intricate channels, began, at once, the attack upon the whole Swedish fleet, without waiting for his Admiral. The consequence was, that Bally's ships were nearly shattered to pieces, and two-thirds of his men killed or wounded. Captain Hay, a British Officer in this division, was ordered to sound the channel, as the frigates advanced upon the enemy. He was cut off, with all his crew, being singly exposed, at times, to the fire of the whole Swedish fleet, and within musquet shot. Captain Green, another British Officer, was killed early in this bloody engagement.

So soon as Prince Nassau's squadron appeared, the conflict ceased. The Swedish flotilla retired into the river Kymen: several of their vessels getting aground, were burnt or taken by the Russians, and a considerable number of prisoners taken. The Swedish galleys continued for the rest of the Summer in their retreat, whither the Russian flotilla could not pursue them.

The

The Russian grand fleet sailed from Cronstadt and Revel, in June, under the command of Admiral Tschitschagow.— They continued for some weeks cruizing in the Gulph of Finland, probably expecting that the Swedish fleet, who were greatly superior in force, would venture to attack them. The Duke of Sudermania, and Admiral Tschitschagow, had each a capital part to play. The Russian ships of war, built at the port of Archangel, had been brought to Copenhagen, consisting of eight ships of the line, to join the grand fleet in the Finland Gulph, consisting of seventeen ships of the line. The Swedish fleet, which contained about twenty-one ships of the line and some frigates, were cruizing in the Baltic, anxiously endeavouring to prevent the junction of the Russians, and to bring one or the other division of their fleet to an engagement, separately. Tschitschagow, finding that the Duke of Sudermania had no intention of quitting his advantageous situation, resolved, or was ordered by his Sovereign, to

to run all risks in attempting to form a junction with the squadron at Copenhagen, without which the Swedes must have remained masters of those seas.

The Russian fleet had not long quitted the Gulph, when the Swedish ships were discovered betwixt the islands of Gothland and Oeland, to windward. They bore down upon the Russian fleet, who waited for them in a line of battle. The van of the Russians kept their wind, and closed with the enemy's van, and a sharp engagement ensued. A few ships of the center divisions were likewise warmly engaged.—The Swedish ships had it, no doubt, in their power to come to close action with every part of the Russian fleet, who, tho' it was not their business to fight until they had joined their other squadron, now waiting for them near the Island of Bornholm, yet remained in a line of battle, neither shunning, nor eager to court this opportunity of fighting.

The

The Swedish Vice-Admiral, Lillehorn, is blamed for not bringing his division to close action: but as only the headmost ships of the Swedes closed with the enemy, surely this Admiral had not the command of all the others? Only two of the center division of the Swedish fleet came down into close action; and it is a pity that the two divisions who were not under the orders of Lillehorn did not shew him a better example.

Admiral Greig, deserted by five of his Captains, failed in taking one-half of the Swedish navy last Summer. The Swedes have, this campaign, by a behaviour something worse than cowardice, made Russia amends, by not taking one-half of theirs. If individual Captains of a division refuse to obey, nothing more can be done, at the time: but certainly it is in the Commander in Chief's power to prevent the bad consequences of the misconduct of any Admiral under him, by instantly throwing out a signal for each ship of his squadron.

Among

Among those brave Officers who gallantly closed with the Swedes, was Captain Molofsky, natural son of Count Tschernichew, First Lord of the Admiralty of Russia. He had gone forward upon the booms, working with his own hands, and giving orders. A cannon shot struck him across the back; he fell, and with his last breath intreated his Officers and men to fight the ship until she sunk; then lifting his finger, upon which was a ring, the dear pledge of love, he kissed it, and expired!

The two fleets, after expending much powder, ceased firing in the evening.—During the night the weather was calm, the fleets lying at a short distance from each other: the wind, in the morning, altered their situation from that of the day preceding. The Russian fleet were now to windward; and, as it was a leading breeze for their course to Bornholm, they formed the line, and offered the Swedes battle, who declined it. The wind again shifted unfavourably to the Russians.—

The Swedish fleet bore down upon them. The Russian fleet, steering for the Gulph of Finland, and chased by the enemy. With a contrary wind, there remained no prospect of the Russians forming a junction with the squadron at Bornholm, while they had, at the same time, a superior force opposed to the attempt. The wind changed again in favour of the Imperial fleet. The Swedes steered towards Carlscrone; the Russian fleet pursuing them, in their turn. The Duke of Sudermania dreaded the approach to Bornholm: but His Royal Highness might have severely drubbed his enemy, before their arrival; and it was surely time enough to fly, when the other hostile ships were in sight. Probably the Duke had small dependance upon the fidelity of his Officers. The Russian fleet continued their course to Bornholm, and soon discovered their squadron from Archangel, who, mistaking their friends for the Swedes, were shy in their approach, until a cutter from Admiral Tschitschagow informed them of his arrival.

rival. The Swedish navy having gone into Carlscrone, the Russians returned to the Gulph of Finland, now the decided Rulers of the northern seas.

In the course of this Summer, Captain Trevenen, who had the command of a small squadron in the Gulph, for the purpose of intercepting the supplies to the Swedish army and galleys, attacked a Swedish fort, which commanded that part of the coast of Finland, which rendered the communication to and from Sweden the more easy. The ships of war, and lesser vessels, had to pass through a narrow channel, leading to the fort, and defended by batteries on each side, from which the enemy fired red-hot balls. One of these balls lodged near the powder magazine of a Russian ship of the line. The Russian Captain, whose name I have forgot, boldly cut his way, with a hatchet, to the place where the ball was lodged, and where the flames and smoke were already spreading, and, with the utmost danger to himself,

saved his ship and crew from instant destruction. The ball was removed, and the flames providentially extinguished. The batteries being silenced, the troops were landed, and the fortress surrendered. A garrison of 240 men were placed in it.

Not many days succeeding this event, the Swedes, alarmed at the loss of a place of such consequence, sent with surprising alacrity, a body of troops to re-take this post. The Russian garrison little expecting so sudden an attack, were surprized; the fort was taken by storm, and the garrison put to the sword. This attack was so sudden, that Commodore Trevenen had no time to send any assistance, and remained with his Officers and crews spectators of the dreadful scene. The Russian Squadron kept up a well-directed fire, but as friends and foes were so mixed in fight, they could not fire upon the fortress itself. An Officer who gave me this account, trembled while he described the shrieks of the wounded and massacred garrison, which
were

were distinctly heard on board the fleet. The Swedes cruelly tossed over the ramparts the wounded and dying ; and when they had finished the work of death, they paraded in sight of the Russian squadron, whose grape shot, however, made them retreat precipitately, and mowed down a great number of them while retreating. Commodore Trevenen, during the attack of the fort, and the retreat of the enemy, placed himself in the top, with his glass and trumpet, anxiously viewing the engagement on shore, and giving orders for the direction of the ships fire, and altering these every moment as he saw the enemy change their position and the effect of the fire.

Captain Trevenen's ship unfortunately was lost in the Gulph soon after this enterprize. The Captain was writing dispatches for her Imperial Majesty in his cabin, when the ship struck upon a sunken rock. I have escaped a second shipwreck. I had applied early this year to Captain

Trevenen to take me with him as a Volunteer, wishing, for once, to see the horrors of war. The Captain apologized to me, that his orders did not permit to take any Volunteers. Another ship of the line, commanded by Captain Thesiger, a British Officer, and a third, by a Russian Officer, were lost likewise this Summer, in navigating this dangerous sea. The north coast of the Finland Gulph is interspersed with an infinite number of small rocks, and many lie even in the middle channel, nearly, or altogether under water. The light-houses, buoys, and flags are so far serviceable; but it is altogether impossible to guard against the innumerable rocks and banks. No sea is worse calculated than the Baltic for the purposes of navigation; and particularly for the navigating of large fleets: and yet the Russians and Swedes put themselves to an incredible expence in equipping grand navies, when a flotilla of gun-boats would equally serve to determine their respective rights and powers. They should mutually agree,
and

and in this agreement Denmark should be included, that none of these nations shall keep above a certain number of small frigates. Their flotillas may be extended to what number each is able to maintain. Such agreement would best suit the local circumstances of Russia, and also the revenues of Denmark and Sweden, which are exhausted in supporting a useless show of strength, and navies without an ocean.

The other Maritime States of Europe, have rich possessions to defend in the most distant quarters of the globe, which, afford too, revenues to build and maintain their fleets. Were the greatest European kingdom without such distant colonies, they might be without such numerous navies. The three Northern Powers, had they occasion for fleets to defend the entrance to the Baltic from foreign navies, would have an apology for their armaments. But their fleets were never yet engaged in the Baltic, unless with each other. They may trust, that no foreign vessel, traders excepted,

will ever be tempted to enter it: and if they should, those Powers have only to put out their lights, and take up the flags and buoys, to prevent their entrance. The northern kingdoms have in their hands the best security against the attack of foreign navies—they keep in their warehouses and merchants yards, the materials of which all foreign navies are built.

What madness then urges Russia, Sweden, and Denmark to worry each other? Nature, more than conquest, has fixed their respective boundaries. Denmark is surrounded by the sea: her province of Norway is separated from Sweden by impassible mountains, which can be defended with a handful of men against millions. Sweden, is separated from Denmark, and Norway, by the same kind of out-works, and from Russia, by the River Kymen, and her rocks and lakes, from which the Russian army, had it consisted of twenty times the number, could not have driven her troops.

Empires

Empires, like Individuals, have their family pride : Denmark boasts of her Frothos, her Canutes, and Waldemars ; Sweden, of her Gustavus and Charles ; and Russia, of her Ivans and Peter. They seem to imagine, that they cannot keep their several kingdoms, but, by the same means, by which their predecessors obtained them : or, that it is absolutely necessary, for the honour of their ancestors, to keep their armour from rusting.

The Baltic, highly improper for the navigating of large fleets, is calculated by nature for galleys and gun-boats ; and as the Northern Powers might keep a large armament of this kind, at less expence than they can five sail of the line, I would recommend at least œconomy in war. They might equally enjoy the pleasure of cutting one another in pieces : they seem to consider the Baltic as the Hall of Odin, and anticipate the delight which was only promised to the Goths in the other world. The coasts of Sweden and
Finland

Finland, are fringed with myriads of small rocks and islands, which afford shelter behind them, from the more open sea, to small boats and vessels, and it is in such places that galley fleets are generally employed.

If the flotillas were to consist entirely of gun-boats, or, if the galleys were disused, and small xebecs to accompany the gun-boats in their stead, these coasting navies would act with more effect. The galleys are too good marks for the gun-boats and batteries among the islands, and being crowded with men, a dreadful slaughter is the consequence when they come into close action. Upon the other hand, the xebecs would be equally capable of securing the retreat of the gun-boats, and nearly, if not better calculated, to act with them in every situation. The only advantage that the galleys have over the xebecs, is, in being constructed for rowing; but their disadvantages more than balance this
this

this excellence. Besides, the xebecs and light frigates can be towed into action, or from it, by the gun-boats, when necessary.

The galleys have a magnificent show---so have ships of the line--and for this show a sacrifice is made of the lives of the subjects, with the revenues and prosperity of the northern kingdoms.

The war in Finland, this campaign, presents little to satisfy the curiosity of those who pant after iron tempests. The grand army of Russia, under the command of Count Muffin-Pouschkin, is encamped upon the eastern banks of the river Kymen; the Swedish army, under General Hamilton, opposite to them, upon the west side.

The Russians constructed some bridges of boats across this river, and several times marched over large bodies of troops, with a view of drawing the Swedes to a general engagement. This was at one time expected

pected to take place; both armies left their encampments. The Imperial army marched into Swedish Finland, but the Swedish army, though wishing likewise for a battle, continued to retreat before the Imperialists, with a view of bringing them to action in disadvantageous ground. The Russian Commander, aware of their plan, recrossed the Kymen with his army. Frequent skirmishes took place betwixt small detachments of Russian Cossacs and the Swedes. The former successfully scoured the Finland woods, taking many prisoners. These Cossacs very much harrassed the enemy, whose troops were unaccustomed to their manner of fighting. The Swedes armed part of their cavalry in the same manner with the Cossacs, and dressed them in the same uniform, but they did not prove a match for the sudden attacks and retreats of the real natives of the Don.

The only remarkable engagements which happened this campaign, were between two considerable detachments of the hostile

tile armies. In the first battle the King of Sweden was present as a Volunteer, and witnessed the defeat of the Russians. The second happened between a detachment of the Russian army, under General Mitchelson, and a body of Swedes, strongly posted near a village in Finland, for the defence of some valuable magazines. The General is blamed for exposing his men, who were severely handled in their attempt to storm the enemy's lines. It is said, the Russian troops remonstrated with their Commander, who branded them with the name of cowards. The brave warriors, unable to bear this reproach, desired to be led to the muzzles of the enemy's cannon ! General Mitchelson upon horse-back, at the head of his men, saw them mowed down upon every side. His horse was shot under him. The Russian General, when every hope of success had vanished, and a great number of men were killed, ordered a retreat. The Swedes were so weakened by their desperate attack, that they retreated in the night.

General

General Mitchelson, the succeeding day, made a more fortunate attack upon the Swedish town, taking 150 soldiers prisoners, and a great quantity of military stores. I made many inquiries after my old acquaintance, the Kirghis—and Bashkirs. The Finland rocks, as I had foreseen, prevented them from displaying their prowess. They were employed therefore in dragging cannon and other works, derogatory to their former glory. I am at a loss to guess what sort of laurels they can obtain in their present employments, to carry back to the plains of Scythia. I feel for the disgrace of the children of our ancestors. So much for modern arts of war, and Finland precipices!

I must content myself with giving you these general sketches of the campaigns in the north. I am so distracted with varying accounts, it might be hazarding too much, yet to adopt any of them, so far as to enter into the particulars of the war. I hope it will be in my power, at a future period,

period, to give you a fuller detail, not only of the Russian war with Sweden, but of the bloody contest between the three Imperial Courts, from the beginning of the war to its conclusion.

LETTER XXXVII.

*Description of the City of Petersburg---Old
Petersburg---The Citadel---William's Is-
land---The Exchange---Museum---Impe-
rial Academies---Cadet Corps---Statue of
Peter the Great---Imperial Palace, &c. &c.*

St. Petersburg, March, 1790.

PETERSBURG, with all its stately palaces and gilded domes, is situated in the midst of a wood, as wild and barren as any in the north. It presents a wonderful picture of what power and genius can accomplish. Independent of art, the Neva is its only ornament: a dead, sandy, flat country, covered with brush-wood, surrounds it upon every side; a few miserable huts scattered about, complete the scene. The great Peter did not look to the most beautiful

tiful, but to the most useful spot, for the scite of his capital: his object was commerce solely. Petersburg is the emporium for naval---Moscow for rural affairs. The Russian empire, extending over a considerable part of Europe and Asia, must have a capital city to every kingdom of which it consists. Tobolsky is the chief city of the Russian dominions under the Pole, and bordering upon China; Petro-Paulovsky, of the eastern countries adjoining to America and Japan; Orenburg, of the provinces bordering upon Tartary and India; Casan, and Astrakan, of kingdoms of the same name, near the frontiers of Persia; Cherson, of the Crimea and provinces adjoining; and Kioff, and Mohilow, of the Ukraine and Little and White Russia, bordering upon Turkey and Poland.

The City of Petersburg is not huddled together: it spreads out, like the wings of its Imperial Eagle. The principal quarter stands upon the continent, and upon the south banks of the river Neva; the second division is what is called Old Petersburg,

and is situated upon several islands towards the north banks ; the third quarter, upon William's Island, in the middle channel of the Neva, betwixt the other two. This noble river, after embracing the whole in its course, empties itself into the Gulph of Finland, immediately below the city. The old city, originally built upon one island, bearing its name, now stretches over several lesser ones: it is very irregularly built, and consists chiefly of wooden houses : here, however, are the first objects that draw attention---the Citadel, in which is the Cathedral, a fine pile of building, with its gilded spire and turrets, whose sparkling grandeur strikes the eye at a great distance, and marks the sacred spot where lie interred the remains of Peter I. and his Empress, the Livonian Villager, Catherine ! This is the Russian Mecca, and none but Infidels will neglect to make a pilgrimage to it. Mahomet's splendid imposture collects together a croud of vagrant Turks and Arabs ; but the mausoleum of Peter attracts the Philosopher,

as

as well as the Warrior, from every corner of enlightened Europe: the first admires the Legislator; the second comes to touch the bones of Scanderbeg!

The boat which gave Peter the idea of building a navy, is carefully preserved in a small house near the sepulchre: it is emphatically called the *Grand Sire*. Before this relic was deposited here, a naval review took place at Cronstadt---the *Grand Sire* had the honour of carrying the Admiral's flag, and received a general salute from the Russian fleet.

Some will say, that the Russian nation are not yet civilized; and that Peter only began the work of civilization---of arts and sciences. What narrow thought!---When the work is finished it is his. Will succeeding Monarchs think themselves disgraced in being named the disciples of this immortal Prince? He gave the plan of the building---he laid the foundations, and reared a part of the walls: succeeding

Monarchs are his workmen, his bricklayers, flaters, carpenters, painters, and upholsterers.

Catherine II. is the most distinguished of Peter's work people, and has made such elegant improvements upon the original plan, that it is so far become her own. The hatchet was the Emperor's favourite instrument: his work was useful, but unpolished. He seemed to be sensible of this, and early called in the assistance of a female. Another Catherine is born to him: the fine arts go hand in hand with those of war, of agriculture, and commerce.

From Old Petersburg we proceed, along a bridge of boats, to William's Island. Upon the north side, and fronting the old town, are the Merchant's wharfs, the Exchange, Custom-House, and warehouses. In the river, between Old Petersburg and William's Island, lie all the vessels that take down to Cronstadt the produce of Russia, to the larger foreign ships, that cannot
come

come to Petersburg, the channel being narrow and shallow at the mouth of the river. These vessels likewise bring from Cronstadt, all goods imported, landing them at the Custom-House, to secure the duties. The south side of William's Island fronts the new city of Petersburg; and here is built a superb line of houses, among which are the Imperial Academies, and the Museum. The Imperial Academy of Sciences is a grand structure, and is amply endued for its support. The Professors are eminent in the republic of letters, and are of different nations. Her Imperial Majesty, to adorn those establishments, selects merit from every climate and country.

The Museum is situated upon the highest and east point of William's Island, opposite the Imperial Palace, upon the continent, to the south; and the Citadel to the north. The west point of this island reaches to the mouth of the Neva. The Museum, I beg Her Imperial Majesty's pardon, is a small warehouse, containing

samples of the various productions of her empire. This world of dominion furnishes a Museum of itself; yet no expence has been spared to complete the collection with every curious production from other countries. Here the Naturalist and Merchant find equal pleasure: the one views, with rapture, the veins of gold, silver, and lead, in the native ore; the other considers how much one hundred weight will produce of pure metal. The Cadet Corps, or Academy of War, formerly the Palace of Prince Menzikoff, is situated betwixt the Academy of Sciences and the Museum. It is the nursery of young warriors, the sons of the Nobility and Gentry; and from this Seminary of Mars are taken the Officers for the Army. The palace of Prince Menzikoff was applied to its present use by Count Munich. There are a number of buildings adjoining, for the accommodation of the young gentlemen. The history of Menzikoff is romantic: raised from the humblest station to the rank of Prince, then racked upon the wheel of Fortune; yet,

yet, in every situation, the art military continued his favourite study. During his banishment in Siberia, the table of his cottage was always covered with maps and plans of the countries, the feats of former wars, and of battles in which he had been engaged; still delighting in what had occasioned his fall, and poring over his destruction! It must appease his manes, that his house is still the nursery of war!

Except this line of buildings upon the banks of the Neva, and another street, the whole of this quarter of the city consists of wooden houses: these are built very regularly in streets, cutting each other at right angles: canals run through the middle of the streets, but, owing to the level surface of the ground, the water in them, in the heat of Summer, stagnates, and is offensive. They serve no good purpose, and it would be proper to fill them up with earth.

A bridge of boats crosses the Neva, opposite the Cadet Corps, making a communication

nication from William's Island to the grand quarter of the city upon the continent. As you walk along this bridge, you have a front view of the equestrian statue of Peter I. which is erected upon the opposite bank of the river; the horse, upon the summit of a rock, majestically rearing, and pawing the air---he seems conscious of his rider: " he smells the battle afar off, his neck is cloathed with thunder." Around the statue are always several Russians, attended by some Biographer. You can trace, without any knowledge of the language, by the gestures of the orator and his audience, when he is recording the defeat at Narva, or the victory at Pultowa. They add, in these orations, that Peter stood upon the very rock which now supports his effigies, while he beheld the Swedish army flying from the field of battle. I have taken a drawing of this celebrated work of M. Falconet, senior: I was assisted by an engraving from a drawing of young Falconet, and have endeavoured to correct some errors in that drawing, or his

Engraver

Engraver has not done justice to the drawing. “ When an heroic monument,” says “ M. Falconet,* is to be consecrated to the “ memory of a Prince, and this Prince has “ atchieved great matters in different, and “ various, and even opposite departments— “ he has gained victories in war--- he has “ enacted wise laws, and founded estab- “ lishments conducive to the happiness of “ his people, in time of peace---his acade- “ mical eulogium may turn upon both “ these texts : but a statue, which can re- “ present but one instant, we must con- “ sider and chuse. If we give a preference “ to his civil qualities over his military “ virtue, this preference cannot justly be “ condemned, till it shall certainly be de- “ termined which of these two kinds of “ glory belongs more particularly to him, “ who has so well deserved them both ; “ but more especially which of them was “ most useful to the happiness of mankind.

“ The

* Translation from the French of M. Falconet's Pieces on Sculpture, by the Rev. Mr. Tooke, of Petersburg.

“ The habit I have given the statue of Peter the Great, is the habit of all nations
 “ ---of all men---of every age: in a word,
 “ it is an heroic habit.”

Upon the right hand of the statue, and to the east, is the Admiralty, and Dock-Yards, and immediately beyond these the Imperial Palace. At this instant there are two first rate ships of war building under the Palace windows! From the Admiralty spire, all the streets run out as radii from the centre of a circle. The principal street is that line of buildings fronting the Neva, for an extent of between three and four English miles: the bank, for the same extent, is lined with granite stone, with ballustrade, and foot-path of the same materials! Near the extremities of this superb street, called the Grand Million, and which taking the course of the Neva, forms a vast obtuse angle: a canal is cut across the main land, making the base of this angel, and surrounding the city upon the continent to the south; so that this
 quarter

quarter entirely inclosed, with the Neva upon one side, and this canal upon the other, for an extent of about eight miles; the whole banks lined with granite stone, having granite ballustrades, or iron railing. Over these canals are erected draw-bridges, likewise built of granite stone. The quarter without this canal may be deemed the suburbs: the houses are mostly of wood, but the houses within the canal are mostly of brick, and plaistered, painted with every variety of colours! No wooden house is suffered to be re-built within the canal, but with brick; and the new is quickly driving the old city out of the gates! Amidst these modern fabrics, the Russian churches every where shoot up their antique turrets! The Russians hold the form of their church walls as sacred as their forms of religion within them. The roofs are covered with block tin, and many of them gilded.

There are in Petersburg three Imperial Palaces. The palace near the Admiralty, in which Her Imperial Majesty resides, is
a mag-

a magnificent edifice of brick stuccoed, and adjoining is a long range of buildings, fronting the Neva, including the private Theatre of the Court. The Marble Palace is built of the stone which gives it this name. The Architect has made what ought to have been the gavel, the front of this superb building---which itself seems to blush at its posture. The third is the Summer Palace, built of timber, and yet the most regular and elegant. It is placed in the Summer gardens, upon the banks of the river, and is truly a delightful residence.

The Russian Nobles, and even the middling ranks exceed in the elegance of their houses. In the Asiatic style, they are all built in squares; an open court in the center, to which is an entry by a large gate way. With this taste is mixed the Grecian and Italian----and Corinthian, Ionic, and other ornaments are too much crowded upon the slight fabric of brick and plaister. It would be better to finish
their

their houses in a plainer style; and the easier expence would enable the possessors to keep them in better repair. Nothing looks so tawdry as a Corinthian cornice of plaister in ruins. The new church near the equestrian statue is building of the finest Siberian marble, and will be one of the most costly and superb structures in the universe. The granite banks of the Neva, the equestrian statue of Peter I. and this admirable building, will deliver down, to the latest posterity, the name of Catherine II. But Catherine is imperial in every thing, and posterity will overlook, even these monuments, amidst the continued display of great actions. The palace near the Admiralty is situated at the point of the angle which the river makes; and here the Neva rolls his tide, embracing the lodging of his Sovereign. From this spot, one has the grandest prospect imaginable: before you, upon the other side of the river, is the old city, with its citadel and gilded spire; the houses surrounded or intermixed with woods. William's Island presents another

another prospect, of a different nature : a wood of masts, planted in front of the streets : to the right and left is the Grand Million, every house in which is of elegant structure, and inhabited by the principal Russian Nobility and Gentlemen.—The Admiralty Dock-Yards interrupt this noble street : it begins again to the left, and west of the Equestrian Statue at the Senate House. The Admiralty Dock-Yards are soon to be removed, and Cronstadt, a more convenient place, adopted for the scite of the Naval Yards. The vacancy from the Palace to the Equestrian Statue and Senate House, will be filled with buildings ; and the Grand Million will then be one continued range of taste and splendor.

I am at a loss to guess what induced the Emperor to pitch upon so awkward a spot for dock-yards, from which the ships must be transported to Cronstadt, over shoals, by means of wooden Camels, when this trouble could have been so easily avoided, by building his navy at the harbour where
they

they lie, and where there is a great depth of water, and every accommodation. The machines called Camels are constructed of two pieces, or a sort of half vessels, built in the same manner as other vessels, but of a curious shape: they are square at the bottom, the ends, and one side; the other side is hollow, and rounding. These half vessels are sunk to a proper depth, one at each side of the ship of war they are intended to carry, and their hollow sides being drawn close to her, form a capacious womb, which embraces the ship of war: they are strongly wrapped all together with cables. The water is then pumped out of the Camels; they rise, and with them the ship of war! Perhaps you will have a better idea of the Camels, by supposing an oblong-shaped basin, cut length-ways, from the top to the bottom: the hollow sides of each half basin will exactly resemble those of the half Camels. Again, join the two halves together, and they form the womb which receives the burthen. The Camels, with their loads, do
not

not draw above eight to eleven feet of water.

Peter, probably anxious to shew his navy to the Russians, built his ships at Petersburg, where there were a greater number to look at them. He had experienced the difficulty of prevailing upon his subjects to come to the capital, and still more in making them embark for Cronstadt.--- The moment they beheld the Finland Gulph, and heard the roaring surge, they made a full stop, or shrunk back with terror at the awful designs of their Prince!

LETTER XXXVIII.

*Description of Cronstadt---Fortress of Cron-
flott---Admiralty---Naval Cadet Academy
---Palace of Oranienbaum---Palace of Pe-
terhoff---Anecdotes of Peter the Great.*

St. Petersburg, June, 1790.

IN arriving from the Baltic, at the head of the Gulph of Finland, you see before you a small low island, partly covered with woods, and at the east end, the city and fortifications of Cronstadt. Opposite to these, and to the entrance of the harbour, to the south, at a quarter of a mile's distance, is the fortress of Cronflot, built upon a bank in the sea. The foundations of the fortress are several feet under water. The channel, leading from Cronstadt to the open gulph, is very narrow, which

D d

con-

constitutes its strength. A few ships of the line could defend it against a very superior force.

The harbour of Cronstadt is formed by wooden and stone piers, projecting in a half moon from the main body of the island: these piers serve, at the same time, as ramparts, and are planted with a number of heavy cannon. This harbour is divided into three grand divisions: the most westerly is to the merchant ships, who lie in lines abreast of each other, moored at buoys. The middle and east divisions are appropriated for the Russian Navy. From the middle harbour, a canal runs to the center of the town, where the Admiralty and Dock-Yards are constructing. The banks of this canal are faced with granite, and the docks and piers will likewise be finished with the same durable and elegant material. The fortress of Cronstot is entirely built from the granite quarries.

The Russians are necessarily superb in their public buildings: they have no other materials

materials for such works than marble, granite, and jasper. Their palaces are built with the two first, and the inside walls are wainscotted with agate, jasper, and lapis lazuli. Siberia furnishes a variety of precious stones, and enables the Russian Monarchs to vie, in splendor, with those Princes of India of whose magnificence the accounts appear romantic.

The Admiralty will contain every accommodation for the Officers employed in it, as well as barracks for the Officers of the Navy residing at Cronstadt, who have apartments and other necessaries, at the expence of Government, at all times.—The whole will be one of the most complete and noble works of the age. Admiral Greig was the active agent in all these undertakings.

The town of Cronstadt is pretty regularly built, but consists mostly of wooden houses. Except a few buildings for the reception of the Officers of Government,

and for the Naval Cadets, it has no ornament but its harbour. The removal of the Admiralty from Petersburg is in every respect necessary, to give importance and elegance to the Plymouth of Russia.—Cronstadt is a well-chosen Seminary for the Naval Cadets: they have here the practice of seamanship continually before their eyes: they view, in the west, the stormy ocean, and are daily accustomed to scenes in which they are intended themselves to act.

The Gulph of Finland contracts itself below Cronstadt, closing gradually in a semicircle, towards that port and Petersburg. The breadth of the Gulph, at Cronstadt, is about fifteen miles, from the Carelian to the Ingrian shore. The first, to the north, presents to the view nothing but gloomy woods: Ingria, to the south, is proudly decorated with the Palaces of Oranienbaum, Peterhoff, and Strelina, and a number of the seats of the Nobility.

Oranienbaum

Oranienbaum is directly opposite to Cronstadt. I embarked in one of the boats which ply the passage here: the winds gently fanned our sails: the footy clouds, in the western horizon, threatened a sudden storm. The seamen pulled hard at the oar, to gain the land before it reached us. We had just entered the harbour of Oranienbaum, when the whirlwind thundered around our heads. Some boats were at this moment passing to Cronstadt: they were hid in the spray of the sea, and in the gloomy squalls, and I remained in dreadful suspense for the fate of the passengers!

The Palace of Oranienbaum is situated upon a rising ground: the city spreads upon the shore, nearer the sea; and the harbour is at a mile's distance from both, but communicating with them, by means of a canal which reaches to the park gates of the Palace. The ground through which this canal passes is swampy—the banks have been constructed, at a great expence, with earth and stones. To the westward of

Oranienbaum, the coast swells into hills, variegated with woods and farm-houses.

The Palace of Oranienbaum consists of different buildings, connected by galleries. From the top of these, one has a delightful prospect of the ocean covered with vessels, of Cronstadt, and Petersburg. It originally belonged to the celebrated Menzi-koff. The apartments are neat, but convey no idea of princely residence. The gardens are small, and in the old Dutch style: in them, however, is a fine piece of water, where lie several pleasure yachts. -- The rising grounds and woods on all sides of this lake, give it the appearance of a harbour land-locked, and you look around to discover where it communicates with the sea.

The city of Oranienbaum is a collection of wooden houses, and contains nothing worthy the notice of a Traveller. It is a kind of out-post to the capital, and one or two regiments of horse or foot are generally sta-

stationed here: at present it is crouded with Cossac troopers. The road from this place to Peterhoff is close by the shore, through a deep sand, and wild forests; yet here, to gladden the dreary journey, we meet with some Gentlemens' country seats. I arrived at last at the village of Peterhoff, and, passing under the shade of an avenue of branching trees, in which are built several handsome wooden houses, for the accommodation of the Court, when Her Imperial Majesty resides at the Palace of Peterhoff, I saw this famous lodging before me.

The Palace of Peterhoff, bearing the name of its great founder, is situated upon a rising ground; the gardens extending from the Palace to the sea shore. Peterhoff is a long narrow building, and, for the time it was built, elegant. It has only one range of apartments, but these are handsome and superb. This was the Imperial Hamlet of Peter. It was a great stretch of his magnificence in things only ornamental,

mental, when he laid the foundations of Peterhoff: it was intended for the entertainment of Foreign Ambassadors, rather than for his own convenience.

Peter was never at ease in his robes: the hatchet and sword were always in his mind, and he sometimes forgot himself so far, as to invite the Ambassadors to assist him in cutting down trees for his Dock-Yards! He was another Uncle Toby, but his plans were not to be executed in less bounds than those which the universe afforded!

In this house are pictured the naval triumphs of Russia, sacred to the memory of its first inhabitant, and Creator of the Navy---the defeat of the Turkish fleet, in the Archipelago, and their total destruction in the Bay of Tschesme, by the Russian fleet, under the command of Count Alexis Orlov. The Turkish fleet, the town and fortress of Tschesme were totally destroyed, and here they appear still burning upon the canvases! But the grand
Russian

Russian collection of statues and paintings is deposited in the Palace of Zarsko Zelo.

The famous John Barclay, in the beginning of the last century, wrote a book which he entitled *Icon Animorum*---A *Picture of Minds*; or the *Characters of Nations*. Were such a book as this, or even short sketches of national characters and customs, accompanied by paintings, representing the various *costumes*, dresses, attitudes, ordinary amusements and occupations of the people of different countries ---the study of modern history, as well as of the influence of climate, food, and manners, in the formation of the countenance and stature, and of physiognomy, too, if there be such a science, would be facilitated, and extended to an astonishing degree. The painted figures, compared and contrasted with each other, would convey instruction, by a kind of intuitive discernment, and all the powers of the mind would be enlivened. Even without any written account, an assemblage of the
phy-

physiognomies, features, dresses, and shapes of all nations, in all countries, with the most habitual attitudes of their members, would present, of itself, a noble field of speculation, and contribute very much to the advancement of the most interesting science—the science of man.

This magnificent design might be attempted, not without a degree of success, by the graving tool. But there are several particulars in the picture of nations, that cannot be hit off by the Engraver, though they may be represented, with great felicity, by the Painter—such as the tints and shades of complexion, the appearance of the sky, the colour of the foliage, and other natural objects, that form the ground on which the human figures are introduced.

Such a *Tableau des Nations* would be an act of munificence to the Muses, worthy of the present Empress of Russia. As there is no Sovereign Prince who sways the sceptre over so many nations, so there is
none

none to whom the world can so naturally look up for so grand and so various a picture. The Emperors of China, in their extensive and magnificent gardens, endeavour to exhibit, as it were, a miniature picture of the natural world: it would be an object worthy of Catherine II. to enrich the Republic of Art, and also that of Science, by a delineation of moral character.

And that so striking and instructive an exhibition might not be confined to one Palace, let it be multiplied (for the generous indulgence of the Empress would readily agree to this) by the POLYGRAPHIC SOCIETY, whose art, by a course of progressive improvement, has been carried to a pitch of incredible, and almost miraculous perfection: their pictures have done them great honour on the Continent--- and such a *Tableau* as has just been described, though the most various and comprehensive ever conceived, could not fail to reward the ingenious labour of the Artists.

Peterhoff is the naval house of Russia; Oranienbaum, the military house. In this last is a fine painting, representing the glorious battle of Pultowa, in which too the original builder of the mansion, Menzi-koff, performed a principal part. Every thing belonging to this Alexander, has been consecrated to military use.

The gardens are in the same style with the others: the statues of Gods and Godeffes keep centry at every turning, and cascades roll down gilded stairs, in place of rocks, which are a scarce commodity in this province; and every cascade, and brook, and lake, have their Guardian Deities. Peterhoff Gardens present a picture of Lapland mythology. Neptune is placed upon his car in a fish-pond, drawn by sea horses, and, as usual, the Courtiers swimming round their Sovereign, and sounding his praises through cockle shells. I could not help addressing His Majesty, to obtain his good graces and favour, as I intended soon to embark for Old England.

The

The arts and sciences never approached Russia, until these statues appeared. They are sacred, and the arm that removes them shall wither from its shoulder. The gardens should likewise be preserved in their present state.

Upon the banks of a small lake, near the shore, is a house in which Peter usually resided, and enjoyed himself in living without that pomp, which his residence in the larger mansion obliged him to assume. Here the servants show the fishing and hunting accoutrements of the Emperor, and the utensils of cookery with which this hero dressed his beef-stakes ! I suspect that they are only copies of the original, which, no doubt, are removed into safer custody. The servants, no doubt, make money of these *relics* ; the reverence for the memory of Peter will increase the price, and the guards have, unquestionably, cheated as many as the watchmen at the tomb of the Prophet.

In

In the lake are a great variety of fish; perch, carp, and other kinds. It is not permitted to any one to throw a hook, and the finny tribe are so familiar, from this good usage, that they will take a bit of bread almost out of your hand.

I went to see the Diamond Mills. To this manufactory are brought the precious stones found in Siberia and other parts.

Near Peterhoff, and in the midst of a forest, is a garden executed in the modern English taste---a very delightful spot; and when the natural flatness of the ground is considered, it is amazing what art and taste have been exerted in finishing it.---Here are winding rivulets, cascades dashing over moss-clad rocks, antique bridges, temples, ruins, and cottages. In one of the huts I found a collection of prints, from the subject of Sterne's Sentimental Journey: La Fleur's dapple seemed to be running off with the jack boots, to the Pole. In this garden is building a new Palace for the Grand Duke.

At

At Perterhoff, the elegant road, formerly noticed, begins, and continues from this Palace to the gates of the capital.--- The verst pillars are built of granite and marble. This road is level as a bowling-green: the distance to Petersburg is twenty-six versts, or eighteen miles. Strelina Palace is nine versts from Peterhoff, and seventeen from the metropolis.

I am sorry to inform you of the failure of Mr. G——e S——I, one of the British Factors here. His character, among his countrymen, and among the Russians, was, and still is, highly esteemed. If the Ambassadors at Foreign Courts were employed in affording patronage and assistance to those subjects of their respective Sovereigns, settled abroad, who do honour to their nation, they would be more usefully engaged than at present, in being the Agents of war, and of the intrigues of their Cabinets.

LETTER XXXIX.

The Abbé Chappe D'Auteroche his invidious Account of the Russians---The vague Accounts given by late Travellers, and the Cause of it---Character of the Russians.

Ingria, June, 1790.

IT is to be regretted, that the most able Writers upon this Empire, have either given way to prejudice, or, on the contrary, were not at liberty to speak freely. Travellers of our own nation, from whom we might have expected the best accounts, pass along with such rapidity, that they seldom mention what is most material for us to know: they fill up volumes with tedious historical scraps, which, however valuable, are not to the purpose. The objects of a Traveller and of an Historian are different. The Abbé Chappe D'Auteroche,

roche, though he travelled with the utmost expedition in Russia, was determined to decide upon the character of the nation. He seems to have viewed the faults of the Russians with the same telescope through which he observed the transit of Venus, at Tobolsk.

I am still at a loss to speak certainly of the character of the Russians: is it fair to judge of a whole nation, by the heterogeneous mixture of people in Petersburg, a new metropolis? What are we to do? Shall we rely upon the accounts given us by foreigners, residing in Petersburg?—These are only acquainted and connected with the low Traders among the Russians, who are, perhaps, as keen in their dealings as any people. Would it be fair to judge of the nations of Europe, by the heterogeneous samples to be found in the warehouses here?

Petersburg is only the advanced guard of the Russian Empire. We must refrain

E e

from

from pointed criticisms upon the character of the natives, until we have visited them at head quarters---in their private recesses, in their villages, in the kingdoms of Kiow, of Moscow, of Tivere, and of Novogorod.

The Abbé D'Autroche refuses them any title to ingenuity ; but unfortunately, he gives, as a proof of his assertion, what proves exactly the reverse :

“ In the Russian armies,” says he, “ the
 “ necessary tradesmen are not taken out
 “ of the shops of artificers, but a recruit
 “ is, by the officer, destined to exercise any
 “ particular art, to which, from his size
 “ and shape, he appears to be best adapt-
 “ ed : a locksmith, for instance, is wanted
 “ in the company, a recruit has a lock put
 “ into his hands, as a model, and he is
 “ ordered to make one like it. This word
 “ of command he executes, we are told,
 “ with the greatest address : it is only ne-
 “ cessary that the model be perfect in its
 “ kind ; he would otherwise copy it, with
 “ all its most glaring defects.”

It

It might be answered to the Abbé, the foldier being ordered to make the one lock like the other, did right in making it exactly so.

The Abbé allows that the Russians are excellent at imitation ; and if the instance he is pleased to mention in a common peasant, is not a proof of ingenuity, it will be hard to define what is meant by the word. Let a lock, in the same manner, be put into the hands of a French or English peasant, they would fail even in copying the defects. The Abbé D'Autroche attributes this imaginary want of intellect to their flat country and hot stoves : but he grants that they are capable of being taught. Is this any proof of poverty of mind ? Did the Abbé teach himself the knowledge of the planets, or was he obliged to some system of others ? He, no doubt, made improvements, from his own observations ; but then, he had been taken from a work-shop, and was not a raw recruit.

The Russians are, at this day, children in the arts : yet, comparatively with other nations, they have made quicker improvements since the date of their first attempt.

---A Traveller, without much ingenuity, may find out a wide field for criticism, without touching on the dull brains of the inhabitants. The young generation are full of life and fire, and resemble much the English youth of the same age.---

In this latitude, it is fairer to judge of the capability of the nation by the son than by the father, and before local evils have laid hold, as it were, of their characters.

—Their inordinate desire for money is strange, if it be true, that they hold it by so precarious a tenor as the will of their Lords. Nothing but their love of brandy exceeds this; and for nothing else will they voluntarily part with cash!

The love of money pervades the higher ranks, if we can call it a love of money to wish for it only to have the pleasure of spending it. The Nobility are fond of pomp,
and,

and, in order to support it, gold is wanted. The Court of Russia has been long famous for its splendor. The connection of this Empire with India, in former times, gave Russia the means, as well as the taste for eastern magnificence. The modern Knœzes inherit, from their fathers at Moscow, the taste; but modern extravagance exhausts the means: and this sometimes occasions an avaricious conduct, from which the worst impressions have been received of the Nobles and Princes. The vanity of military rank puts it out of their power to increase their fortunes, which a strict attention to their peasants and estates would soon change for the better.

From this neglect arises a dependance upon Government, and upon great men in office—a burthen to all parties. Their situation is the same with the Nobility of other nations, where military parade and war are deemed more honourable than the arts of peace. Yet, even in our weal-

thy island, the extravagance of the higher ranks is not to be supported by the most affluent fortunes, and too many of them depend upon the Court.

After having squandered their fortunes among the Public, they become Pensioners upon those whom they had thus patronised.

LETTER XL.

Of the Plan adopted by Catherine II. for the gradual Emancipation of the Russian Peasantry---Manners and Customs of the Russians---The Simplicity of the Religion of the Peasantry.

Ingria, June, 1790.

BEFORE we bestow the appellation of barbarous upon the Russians—before we even call them slaves, it will be fair to look round among the other nations of Europe, and inquire what are the virtues and liberties which they boast of? If the most civilized are the most luxurious, which it might be easy to prove, they cannot be either virtuous or free. We shall find, that luxury has debauched every European nation; and that those who boast most of liberty, are loaded with taxes, occasioned by the

wars of ambitious Ministers, supported by venal representation of venal electors! If this be the situation of the most powerful, and the freest nation upon earth, it will take away from the odious stigma of slave, and barbarian, so liberally given to a happy race of men. I may here observe, that the people being the root and stem of constitutions and laws, they must first amend themselves, before they can expect any good reformation. To begin by lopping branches, is a ridiculous process.

The situation of the Russians, in regard to freedom and civilization, is just what it ought to be, or might naturally be expected, in their present circumstances, which have been the circumstances of every other nation, in their turn.

I have seen learned treatises upon the subject of slavery, by those who have never seen a slave. They recommend to tear the bandages at once from eyes which have long remained in darkness, and expose

pose them, at once, to the beams of the meridian sun. It may be as well, and as prudent, gradually to prepare the way to freedom, by implanting principles of morality in their minds, in order to give them just ideas of the principles and particulars in which liberty consists, and of their duties to God and men : in short, to free the mind before the body. This is the field in which the Political Reformer should labour. It is only by the gradual maturation of moral causes, that rude and savage nature is to be trained up to the exercise of virtue, and the enjoyment of liberty.

Let them first be made capable of being good members of what we call civilized society, or let them remain as they are, less luxurious, less vicious, and, if you will, less polished and free than we are.

Her Imperial Majesty, in establishing foundling hospitals in many different parts of the empire, establishes, with them, a nursery of freedom. In these, the children
of

of as many as please are received and educated, and put to apprenticeship, to any trade they may chuse, when they arrive at a proper age ; and they are thenceforth, in every respect free. The new schools, planted in every part of Russia, for the education of youth, equally serve to promote the cause of liberty. Her Imperial Majesty was even willing to give liberty by more rapid means ; and in the first outline of her new code of laws, a clause was inserted, which would have nearly emancipated the peasantry : but it was soon found necessary to erase this clause, for the peace and safety of the nation. I will recommend to the Russian Nobles and Gentry, landed proprietors, a mode of liberating their peasantry, which cannot be attended with any danger, or with any loss to them. Let them put a price upon freedom ; let them raise a mark for their peasantry to strive to gain, by industry. Were it even 100l. per head, the peasantry would soon emancipate themselves, by permitting them, as at present, to enter into trade.

The

The Russians engaged in trade are not inclined to drunkenness, to such a degree as the common peasant in the country, but generally sober and active.

Her Imperial Majesty, in building the city of Sophia, near the Palace of Zarsko Zelo, so called after her maiden name, which was changed to Catherine upon her marriage, designed to make this infant city an asylum for the Russian peasantry who were oppressed by their Lords, or who wished for liberty. It was soon found, however, that none but the most profligate and idle came to inhabit Sophia, and that the peasants considered Sophia only as the means of obliging their Lords to agree to all their demands, by threatening to go there to reside. The asylum was consequently shut up. One circumstance, however, occurred, which points out an excellent plan for emancipating those who really deserve liberty. A Russian peasant had made a considerable fortune in trade: he offered his Lord a price for his freedom:

dom:

dom: this was refused, the proprietor expecting, no doubt, to fleece the slave of all he was worth. The peasant, though a new city was open for his reception, still endeavoured to procure freedom by purchase. When every attempt failed, he went to Sophia, where he now resides, and at present pays annually to Government to the amount of several thousands sterling, duties for articles in which he traffics.—The city of Sophia should still be a refuge for such, and for such only. Fix the price of freedom: give a slave a small property in land, or *peculium*, as among the Romans of old and our West-India Settlements at this day, with some time for cultivating it, and nothing more is wanting to every purpose---both that of humanity to the Slave, and justice to the Master.

A common peasant, if he can make a shift to live, and to pay his rent, has no other inducement to spur him to industry; and as that is done without much exertion, he falls into every vice of slavery.

Hold

Hold up to him freedom, but not luxury, as a spur to industry.

When this mark is fixed, their exertion to attain it will render them industrious; and this habit of industry will render them capable and deserving of freedom. They will have the more value for this, that it has cost them dear, and naturally receive the idea, that, by a continuance of their industry, they will best preserve their liberties.

The landholders need not be in any terror that his estates will be deserted by this emancipation of the slave, if, when emancipated, they will give them small farms, at moderate rents, payable in money. The Russians are, perhaps, more attached to their country than any people: they cannot all engage in trade; and a sufficient number will become farmers, when they can call their own what remains in their barns after paying their rent! Their active dispositions incline them rather to commerce than

than agriculture, from the quick return of profit; but a Russian will accommodate himself to any situation where money is certainly to be made, which he has not in his present situation. And it would be more honourable to the Russian Nobility to be supported by revenues derived from the industry of freemen, than from the labour of slaves; which, however, must of necessity be the case for some time longer: for slavery, after all, whatever hot-headed Fanatics may say or write, is absolutely one of the stages through which tribes and nations of men are destined to pass, into free and nobler systems.

Travellers into Russia have described the servile demeanour of the Russian slave, particularly in his mode of salutation, in bowing his head to the earth; and they seem to rest upon this, as a mark of a slavish mind. But we should not judge of people by so vague a proof as a peculiar mode of salutation, or compliment. The Russian has as much meaning in this salute,

lute, as we have in subscribing ourselves the most humble servants of one another, in letters. Besides, a Russian only observes this piece of politeness to his superior, his commander, or one on whom he has immediate dependance; and at the very time he is bowing himself, he familiarly calls them brothers, as they also call him, if they were the greatest Princes in the Empire. A Russian seldom lifts his hat, to any person above his own rank, unless he knows him, and depends, in some degree, upon his favour: but they are punctual in this common salute to those of the same rank with themselves: they are constantly bowing to one another, and a stranger, who does not inquire farther, considers all this as a proof of servility. A Traveller, marching through Russia, will receive more salutes of this kind from the peasantry, if he is cloated in a sheep's skin, and a beard appending to his face, than if he were dressed in purple.

These instances of their customs, are proofs of a very noble spirit in the natives.

I can-

I cannot help observing here, that the Russian women are as elegant in their manner of saluting, as the men are awkward: putting both hands upon their breast, they gently incline their head, with the utmost grace and ease: and a cottage girl will acquit herself as handsomely as a Dutchess. Nature has given all the Russian females a most bewitching manner of address, which is in direct contrast with the rough, blunt male peasant, who, except in the article of bowing, nearly resembles the Bear, whose fur he wears. Mr. Wraxall, however, complained, that in his journey of 4000 miles, he could not obtain a single kiss from any of the ladies near the Pole, unless from an old Swedish Dutchess, wanting the teeth. This must have been owing to the hasty manner of amorous youth, since the Rev. Mr. Coxe gives us a minute detail of the regular approaches to the lips of the northern damsels; no doubt, for the instruction of those of his countrymen who may visit Scandinavia!

The

The effect of climate, and local causes, upon men and manners, is wonderful! Man seems to take the very complexion of his body from that of the earth where he is situated.

Yet in these frozen regions they have found out a method, in some particulars, to counteract the effect of climate. I have already observed, that the Russians are not such fools as to shiver, like many of our countrymen, under slight clothing, even in the rigours of cold. The higher classes are wrapt close in furs, the lower in the woolly skins of sheep: a kind of natural fleecy hosiery, one of the most important articles of British manufacture, which was first brought into notice by the late Lord Heathfield, a philosopher as well as great military Commander, not only as affording a most comfortable degree of warmth, but as a most efficacious remedy against rheumatism and the gout. The plan now in agitation, for disseminating knowledge, enterprise, and industry, at the northern

and western extremities of Britain, by translating one of the COLLEGES at Aberdeen to Inverness, or perhaps Dingwall, and converting the empty building into a manufactory of the fine Scotch wool into garments of the fleecy hosiery kind, so well adapted to northern latitudes, under the auspices of the patentees of that useful invention, who are men of liberal minds, is highly worthy of all possible encouragement. The run from Aberdeen to the Baltic, where, and particularly at Petersburg, the demand for fleecy hosiery garments, when once known, will be great, is short and easy.

The ancient Scandinavians had not found out the art of heating their houses by stoves, and the cold they suffered made them chaste in Winter! All sublime historians, in prose and verse, have therefore represented Chastity as cold, and dressed her in virgin snow, and icicles. The Poets flated the Temple of Diana with pieces of ice. The Russian cabins are so many hot-houses, which,
added

added to their baths, have created, in both sexes, the most amorous dispositions: and they cohabit together at as early an age as the natives of Indostan.

The Germans, Danes, Swedes, and Norwegians, having likewise the stove, preserve the Summer heat in the bleak months, and are fond husbands and gallants all the year. Britons are moulded by other causes. Without stoves, and without clothes, no nation suffers so much from cold. It is surprising, then, that we are not as famous for our chastity as for our courage.

Liberty is the stove which warms us! Liberty gives commerce----commerce, wealth—wealth, luxury—and luxury, an amorous complexion.

As the Russian peasant is bound to the estate, the estate is no less bound to him. Every Russian landholder must pay his taxes to Government, and maintain them,

by giving the rustics a sufficient portion of land. The proprietor, no doubt, exacts a rent; but sometimes the peasant uses the freedom to drink his crop, and the Lord has no recourse but to the whip. A Russian peasant, of the genuine breed, will risk a beating, at any time, for a pint of brandy.

It has been observed, that the natural disposition of men is best discovered when they are in liquor. If this is the case, I can testify the good temper of the Russians. When they are drunk, they continue kissing one another, until they turn sober. Their lips are in constant motion, either emptying the bottle, singing, or pressing the mouths of their bearded brothers.--- The ladies, too, of *the lower classes*, sometimes indulge in libations to Bacchus!--- However overpowered they may be, male or female, by the juice of barley, they never neglect to cross themselves when they come near to a church.

The

The Russians, like the great men of other nations, leave their religion in the hands of the Priests, and pay them for taking charge of it. The Clergy read the service and sing hymns, joined by a chosen band of choristers. The audience attend, in respectful silence. The Priests read the service with such expedition, as if they were afraid that the audience should understand it; and indeed if one distinct word reach the ear of any of the congregation, they have reason to be proud of their quick hearing.

A Russian contents himself, if he is a good man, with his good works: his religious duties consist in crossing himself. When he comes out of doors in the morning, the first thing he does is to cross himself, turning towards any church within sight, or to the sound of any bell within hearing. When he eats or drinks, he crosses himself before and after meals. When he lets his sledge for hire, he crosses himself upon receiving the fare. When he begins

a journey, when he enters any house, when any thing remarkable occurs, as being informed of the death of a relation or acquaintance, a thunder storm, or whatever suddenly strikes his attention, he crosses himself. The Russian beggars, of whom, indeed, there are few in Russia, as every estate maintains its peasantry, have the most humble manner of crossing themselves, and the most interesting humility of demeanour, in asking charity, that can be imagined. Upon a holy-day, they place themselves before the churches, upon their knees, even when the ground is covered with snow, and the cold winds howling around them. In this posture, bowing their heads to the earth, and crossing their breasts with fervor, they call upon the name of Christ, and humbly implore the charitable mite. If the passenger bestows this, the suppliant blesses him: if he refuses, he also blesses him.

LETTER XLI.

*Soil of the Province of Ingria---Present State
of Agriculture---Economy of the Peasantry
---Anecdote of the Grand Duke Paul Pe-
trovitsch---His Attempt to Emancipate the
Peasants---German Colonies for the Im-
provement of Agriculture--Anecdote of a Sa-
moeide Member of the Russian Parliament.*

Ingria, August, 1790.

PERHAPS it is in every respect for the benefit of the Russian Empire, that the capital is situated in a barren province. Petersburg acts upon the Empire as a foreign country, and keeps the whole in motion, in supplying her demands.

The soil of Ingria is a white sandy clay, which is deemed the poorest of all the sorts of earths ; yet here, by the kind providence

of Nature, it is made to produce abundant crops, when properly cultivated. This flat country receives upon its bosom an even covering of snow during Winter, and this, in the Spring, melting, distributes moisture to the lands, with the same equality. But this snow, now serving for manure, would prove the destroyer of the soil were the lands hilly. The thaw in Spring would, in this case, occasion a run of water, which would carry along with it that moisture which the soil now retains, as well as its richest particles. Upon the other hand, were the soil of Ingria of a rich nature, this flat surface of the lands, when the snow melted, would reduce it to a mortar, and render it useless, since so short a Summer's sun would not exhale the over-abundant moisture. The sandy soil drains itself, yet the flat surface of the land makes it retain a sufficient quantity of sap.

The rye harvest is finished : it is later this year than the last, owing to the wet season.

Rye

Rye is the golden grain of the North: the peasants do not sow much of any other kinds of corn. Of this grain they make their bread, and their drink too: rye steeped in water gives them their favourite draught. The culture of their rye differs very little from that of the wheat in Britain: it is sown in Autumn, after Summer fallow. The Winter snow protects it from the severity of the frost. Of oats and barley small quantities only are sown, and they are seldom reaped in a perfect state. The Summer is short, and when attended, which it generally is, with heavy rains, the harvest is retarded.

The oats and barley are then cut green, and dried in their barns with stoves. The rye, under the same circumstances, is treated in the same manner. The process is very simple: the grain, with its straw, is placed upon rafters in the barn, and a stove heated beneath them. A few hours only is requisite to dry the grain in so hot an oven, and a new quantity is brought, until the whole

whole crop is dried. The Russian distillers use all sorts of grain. The oats are raised chiefly for their horses.

The poor people, in Summer, cannot afford to live upon beef; and the fish, at this season, are dearer, too, than in Winter. The peasantry, as substitutes, use vegetables, especially the cucumber, which they eat with black bread. The cucumber peculiar to this climate is smaller than the English kind: it is cultivated in every garden, in vast quantities; and every cottage has a cucumber plantation belonging to it. They are now selling at five copics, or about two-pence per hundred! The peasants either eat them when newly cut, or pickled; and one seldom sees a Russian in Summer, without a bit of black bread in one hand, and a cucumber in the other.

The pickled cucumber is prepared in this manner: a layer of oak leaves is first put in the bottom of a cask, then a layer of cucumbers, and so alternately, until the
cask

cask is filled. A pickle is then made, in the common way, with salt and water; care being taken that it is not made too strong, and poured into the cask, over the cucumbers. It is only necessary to keep the cask in a cool cellar, and the cucumber is soon ready for use, and keeps twelve months, or longer, in good condition.

Strangers do not, at first, relish this arctic pickle: yet they soon become fond of it, and eat it with all sorts of viands. I imagine, if a proportion of vinegar were added to the salt, this dish would be the more wholesome. The Russians, from their liking to salt messes, are very scorbutic in their habits.

The Russian and Finland peasants pickle other roots in the same way.

The cabbage is another grand article in the Russian œconomy. Large tubs are filled with this plant, cut down in small shreds; upon these cold water is poured,
and

and the cabbage steeped, until it sours.—The water is then taken off, and the operation is completed. This is done in August and September, while the weather is yet warm enough to assist in the fermentation. The casks are put into cellars, and the cabbage is frozen during the cold weather, so that, when wanted for use, it must be cut with a hatchet. It must be thawed in cold water, and thereafter, a soup is made of it with meats.

Any kind of frozen substance put into warm water, or near any thing hot, instantly putrifies; and the Russians are very careful in the management of this Winter provision, upon which they greatly depend. The peasantry having laid in a proper quantity of rye, meal, salted cucumber, and sour cabbage, bid defiance to the nine months of Winter. They procure, too, at this season, from the market, frozen fish and meat, in such quantities as their circumstances may permit. Their cattle are the worst provided for in the long

long dreary season, from October to May; and this is owing more to the laziness of the peasantry, than to the want of a sufficient quantity of grass, if they would be at the trouble to cut it in due time, and to lay it up in the same good order that they do their own provisions.

The peasants not only make preparations of cabbage for their own consumption, but for that of the great towns. It is common to see several hundred sledges, with as many tubs of four cabbage, driven to Petersburg. The boors, in returning to town, seat themselves in the tubs, and look like so many Disciples of Diogenes.

Every peasant is allowed a certain portion of land for the purpose of agriculture, and a considerable space of woodlands is granted to the villagers, in common, for feeding their herds and flocks, and to supply Winter provender for the beastial. They pay their Lords in money and in service---sometimes partly in grain. The exactions of the Lords are arbitrary.

The

The Russians and Fins are both of them very indolent farmers ; yet, the first are as lively and active, as the others are naturally dull and sluggish. The Russians, naturally spirited and quick in all their passions, are not well calculated to wait the slow returns of harvest ; and the want of population, in a wide fertile country, is unfavourable to exertion,

The hot stoves would of themselves occasion all their indolence, did no other cause exist ; and their lively tempers, that must be employed in some way, make them drunkards. They do not drink to warm themselves because they are cold, or to drown melancholy because they are slaves. The Tongusian hunters suffer more cold than any people, and they are the sobrest of any. The lower order of Englishmen drink as much as those of Russia, only they differ in their manner of drinking.---The Russian swallows as much at once as serves him for some hours ; the Englishman sips continually, and talks politics over

over his bottle. Now, it is wonderful that the Russians should drink because they are slaves, and Britons because they are free ! A Briton should never get drunk, lest he forget, but for a moment, that he is free ; or have wild ideas, instead of sober reality.

I do not pretend to say, that freedom and security of property are inimical to industry : they are the mothers of industry, and every noble exertion. But I will prove that, were the Russians at this moment free, they would be less industrious, and have more vices than they have at present, if that freedom were given them before they are prepared for it.

I will content myself just now with giving one or two glaring instances of the stubbornness of ignorance.

Slaves will complain of hardships, and pant after liberty, without knowing their incapacity for enjoying freedom. It is only for those who are capable of freedom, that

we should be sorry if they remain in a state of bondage! The complaints of the peasantry, upon some estates of the Grand Duke, reached his Highness. He ordered them to be put upon the same footing with English farmers, exacting a trifling rent, providing them with every implement of husbandry, and giving them instructors to teach them agriculture. The peasants made shift to sell their new property, and drink the value in the course of two years: they failed to pay even the trifling stipulated rent, and petitioned to be put upon their old establishment.

The new code of laws, before it was published, was reported to contain a very strange kind of freedom; and the more distant from the metropolis, the more ridiculous were the notions entertained of that freedom. The peasantry were impressed with an idea, that they were to have the *freedom of enslaving* their Lords, or to force them to do whatever they required; and they began to put the *law* in execution,

by

by murdering several Proprietors of estates.

The Russians are a fine people, but they are not yet ripe for receiving freedom.— Their Sovereigns are doing every thing in their power to prepare them for liberty, by inuring them to industry and good habits; and this is all that the sober and wise advocates for liberty can wish for. There are many instances of the unnecessary oppression of the peasantry; but this is neither the fault of the Sovereign, nor of the Proprietors, further than, that the Proprietors should be more careful than they sometimes are, in appointing Overseers on their estates. These are the tyrants who bring odium upon Government, and upon the Russian Nobles; and there should be some regulations adopted, to prevent men without character or feeling, from having it in their power to disgrace their country. But while we allow these evils to exist, it will easily occur, that so sensible a people

the Russians, yet untaught, and having passions, of consequence, wild and furious, are not yet to be kept under, but by a steady, and even by a severe hand.

I have witnessed the dismissal of tyrannical Overseers of land, on several occasions. When the Proprietors know of the evil, it is their interest to cure it. Both Lord and Peasant ought to be the happiest people upon earth. Russia is extensive and fruitful, and the taxes, in times of peace, very moderate. The natives are capable of every improvement in arts and sciences. Time will remove temporary disadvantages, which all other nations have had in their turn.

In the Province of Ingria, and in the neighbourhood of Petersburg, are colonies of German farmers, formerly established by Her Imperial Majesty. Their farms are proofs of what industry can effect, even in the latitude of 60 deg. They raise very fine rye crops, and they supply the metropolis

polis with all sorts of vegetables, as cabbages, carrots, turnips, potatoes, &c. The adjacent city gives them plenty of manure, of which they use too much. They seem to consider the quantity rather than the quality of their crops; and the potatoes in particular, which should be excellent in a sandy soil, are spoiled by the heaps of manure thrown upon the land. This is very much to be regretted, as this root would be a more wholesome food for the natives than their salted cucumber; and it might gradually draw off their taste from that excess of raw vegetables, which they devour continually. Those German colonies are established in many other parts of the empire, and their example will, in time, excite the Russian peasants to follow agriculture with more attention and industry.

But the Russian, with every local evil and disadvantage, is inactive only in affairs of agriculture: in trade he is a very different person; and from this I am apt to think that their property is not so insecure

as some, who are more attentive to the names of liberty and vassalage than to matters of fact, would persuade us. Nor are his greater exertions in trade than in agriculture, occasioned by a taste for the pleasures of luxury. The Russian trader, as yet, deals in luxuries without tasting them, brandy always excepted: his only object being to gain money. The new code of laws has put the people upon a very different footing from what they were on formerly; and the natives, when employed in trade, or other concerns which demand quick application, and are attended with quick returns of profit, do not appear to be afraid of getting rich. It is diverting to hear the two accounts given by the Russians, by those at one thousand miles distance: the sage philosopher, in his closet; and the mercantile foreigner, who resides in Russia. The first, oppressing the natives with chains and knouts, and every load of misery and woe, renders them stupified, fullen, and careless: the second complains, that the natives are as sharp as himself, and that very little advantage

advantage can be got over them in any dealings; but, on the contrary, that the Ruffians have no aversion to over-reaching, when in their power; and as they do this in a less polite and sly manner than polished nations, the proofs against them are clearer, and the complaints louder than they might be otherwise.

In forming the new code of laws, Her Imperial Majesty summoned, from every part of the Empire, Deputies to assist her Councils. When the Samoeide Deputies came, in their turn, to be questioned in regard to what new regulations were necessary in their country, they replied, “ that
 “ they had few laws, and did not require
 “ more: that if any one put another to
 “ death, he, likewise, was punished with
 “ death.” They were asked, “ if they had
 “ no other criminals amongst them—no
 “ thieves, no adulterers?” They answered, “ that there were such among them.
 “ What, then,” rejoined their interrogators, “ are the punishments annexed to

“ the crimes of theft and adultery ? ” —

“ What ! ” said one of the reverend Deputies, starting with surprise, “ is not detection a sufficient punishment ! ”

LETTER XLII.

Customs and Manners of the Finlanders----
Contrast of Character between the Russian
and Finlander---Character of the Russians
---Native Politeness and Good Nature---
Anecdote of a Russian Soldier---Of a Rus-
sian Sheriff.

Ingria, Nov. 1790.

NO two nations differ more from each other than the Russians and Finlanders. The former are as active, acute, and sensible, as the latter are flow, heavy, and stupid. Both are nearly in the same situation in regard to freedom, or rather in regard to slavery: both are under the same climate. This proves that there is a difference in the very nature of men, which neither local situation nor climate is able wholly to eradicate.

The poor Finlanders, tossed about from one Master to another, hardly know to whom they belong: the Russians, as their conquerors, claim the superiority; and a Russian peasant, in comparison with the Finlander, deems himself a Gentleman. The apparent slowness and stupidity of the Finlanders may be partly occasioned by a degrading treatment. My proposal of removing them to the province of the Ukraine, would put this numerous and industrious nation more upon a level with the Russians, and if they actually possess abilities, a situation more independent will bring them forth. This plan would be of great service to the Russians. The contemplation of a people so much inferior to them, as the Finlanders are at present, leads them to suppose themselves more accomplished, in manners and arts, than the world is yet willing to allow them to be.

Civilization is best promoted by example. The best books of laws, manners,
and

and sciences, sent among uncivilized nations, translated into their native language, would hardly excite their notice; or, if they did, probably their contempt or derision. But when foreign nations mix with them, when they see theory reduced to practice, the superior wealth of the strangers, they begin to exert themselves, to equal the others in arts, which they are now convinced is the sure road to affluence. The British nation is copied by all others, because they are the richest: which naturally makes foreign nations conclude that those arts which procured superior riches, are themselves superior to the arts of other states. When the Russians see the wealth of a people, whom they at present despise, increased by means of industry, and the adoption of arts common to both—when they find the Finlander approaching to equality with themselves, they will be convinced of the necessity of adopting the arts and sciences of foreign nations, in order to maintain their boasted pre-eminence over the Finlanders. The
Russians

Russians have already the example of foreign nations; but they have not long had it, and that only from a few as yet resident with them: and when their pride as well as interest is joined, their motions, their improvements will be more rapid.

The Finlander, situated as he is, remains quiet, and cautious of giving any offence: this caution and quietness have produced in him a considerable share of low cunning. I do not recollect to have seen a Finlander in a passion: low murmurs are the utmost stretch of his feelings. A Russian, though he does not repel, shrinks from insult, and gives vent, the first opportunity, to his curses, when his tyrant is out of hearing, but without paying any regard who may hear him beside. In this instance he resembles a woman: he makes up in words, what he dare not in blows; and frequently, too, his tears are summoned to the aid of his speech. The tears of a Russian start from him indignantly, and give even a greater manliness to his looks. A Finlander

lander hangs his head, weeps, whines, and complains like a child.

The Finlander being deemed, and even deeming himself inferior to the Russian, copies after him in manners, but particularly in wearing the beard: and no doubt he means this, too, as a disguise, to lose, in dress and manners, the odious distinction which otherwise would fall more severely upon him.

Their religion does not enjoin wearing the beard, and it must certainly be for the purpose I have already hinted at, that the Finlander wears it. Those of this nation who still remain under the Swedish Government, universally shave the beard. The Russians, emigrants from finer climates, add the sheep-skin to their other clothes, in Winter. The Finlanders, the natives of the Polar regions, are more hardy in this respect. A Finlander seldom wears the sheep-skin, though his dress be, in other respects, nearly similar to the Russian:

fian: it consists of a coarse pair of linen drawers, which serve both for breeches and stockings. Their legs are wrapped, besides, with pieces of linen or woollen stuff, rolled about with straw ropes; and they have straw shoes upon their feet. Their coat is of coarse woollen stuff, of a dark brown or white colour, made without regard to shape, and is tied round the body with a band. The Fin's beard defends the lower part of his face, and a fur cap his head from the cold; and he ties a handkerchief round his neck. The Russian's dress differs from this, chiefly in his exposing his neck to cold and heat, and wearing leather boots, instead of straw stockings. I have observed that the Finlanders, in one instance, seeming to forget their desire of blending themselves with Russians, wear, universally, a red cape to their coats. But let a Finlander be ever so near in dress to the Russians, I can pick him out from among a crowd of the latter: not only his white locks betray him, but his inanimate figure, which seems to
move

move by outward rather than from inward impulse. White locks, common to the Danes, the Norwegians, the Swedes, and Finlanders, prove them the most ancient inhabitants of the countries they now live in, and probably of the same origin. I do not understand much either of the Finland or Swedish dialect; but, if my ears do not deceive me, they are nearly similar, not only in many of the words, but in the manner of speaking: both people have a very plaintive tone in their pronunciation.

The Finlander imitates, with success, the dress of the Russian: a stranger is not sensible of the difference between the two people: he finds great difficulties, however, in his attempts to be as cheerful as his conquerors. A Russian sings from morning till night, unless when he is paying away money. A Finlander never tunes his throat, unless when he is drunk, and then he roars, without regard to music: he catches, perhaps, a tune from some passing Russian

Russian, but he forgets it again in a few minutes. I wondered, at my first arrival here, to hear such a mixture of good and bad music, upon the high ways. I now find who were the *base* performers. A Finlander pulls off his hat to every person who appears like a Gentleman---a Russian seldom, unless to his brothers in sheepskins.

The Finland women are extremely coarse in their persons and features. They wear a strange kind of dress, ornamented with embroidery of different coloured threads, and hung in every corner with glass beads, which are even wrought into the cloth. They are fond, too, of gold and silver ornaments, and have each a sort of silver gorget upon their breast. But this is their holy-day dress: in ordinary, it differs little from that of the men. The married women tie up their hair, and wear upon their heads a small hood of linen. The unmarried women allow their hair to fall upon their shoulders, and have sometimes

times a gaudy head-dress, composed of a bit of pasteboard, or other stiff substance, studded with beads, or sparkling with lace. This last piece of finery encircles, but does not cover their heads. In this last article of dress, they appear to have copied after the Russian females, whose habits, I have already observed, bear a strong resemblance to that of the women in the Highlands of Scotland: yet the dress of the Russian men does not, in the smallest degree, resemble that of the Highlander: indeed, neither of them wear breeches; but the Russian long trowsers has no similarity to the philabeg. The dress of the Russian is long, flowing, and warm—the Highlander's, his plaid excepted, short and scanty.

The inhabitants in many countries under the Line, are not more tawny than the Finlanders, men and women, at an advanced, and even at a middle period of life. The extreme cold of the Polar Winter, not less than the hot stoves and baths, and

and the sultry Summer, produce this effect, with the assistance of their dirty habits. The Russians, particularly the women, have a spirit of cleanliness, in defiance of their general customs, which are inconsistent with it. But the Finlanders, when old, retire as it were amidst filth itself: their forms are incrusted with nastiness, and indeed the human form, amongst them, is nearly lost. When young, their colour is rather delicate; their snowy hair spreads upon their shoulders, and they would seem to promise more agreeable persons in old age. The Russians have dark hair and complexions from infancy, tho' many of the Russian women have not only fair complexions, but delicate shapes, which, added to their enchanting demeanour, renders them irresistibly charming.

Beauty, among the Finlanders, is rarely found. I have, nevertheless, seen some perfect models of beauty among the females, which their aukward manner and dress could not hide: for the Finland ladies

dies have not the native politeness of the Russian, and when they are polite, it is copied from the latter.

I have in vain attempted to discover what the Finlander inherits from Nature, unless a soft disposition, which is entirely moulded by the actions of those causes already mentioned.

I find no difficulty in drawing the portrait of the Russian. He inherits a soul that darts its light through the mist, which hides rather than mixes with it. I have before taken notice of the inclination of the Russians to fun and merriment. They catch at every ludicrous circumstance; but I never saw a people so good natured, and so very polite withal. A Russian laughs, if it appears to him that you wish to make him laugh; and every peasant contrives to excite laughter in his neighbour: but they seldom laugh at any incident, however ludicrous, if it is occasioned by mistake, and particularly if the mistake is at

H h

tended

tended with any uneasy circumstance to the person who makes it. I have often admired their behaviour to foreigners, who attempted to speak the Russian language. In many other nations, and most I believe among our own countrymen, nothing affords such diversion as the blunders committed by strangers, in speaking their language, and even in companies who wish to be esteemed polite. A Russian boor, if addressed by a stranger, looks anxiously at him, and is uneasy for his errors: he encourages you to make signs, to assist him in guessing your meaning: he even instructs you to make them, and having guessed at your meaning, which he does very quickly, he is very happy, and flies to procure what you want. A Russian is not so quick in understanding his native language, when he is desired to do what he knows he will be forced to do. He is, at this time, as slow and stupid as a Finlander. But where he knows he is to procure thanks, and in many instances when he can expect nothing but thanks, he is fond of obliging.

A Rus-

A Russian accustomed to obey, is equally fond of being obeyed, when he is in the least degree in authority, or where he is certain of being in the right.

It will appear strange to you, who have heard nothing from Russia but sounds of dungeons, chains, and knouts, to read these new sketches of their customs and character, which I do assure you are drawn from life; and their vices and virtues, their faults and excellencies, recorded as they occurred to my observation. A Russian coachman, some time last Summer, drove me into the capital. A retinue of some great man was coming from it, and, keeping upon the left hand side of the road, my coachman called out to the postillions to keep to the right: the road was the best to the left, so the great man's postillions, trusting that their magnificent show would awe us into compliance, kept their ground. My coachman poured upon them a volley of oaths. The postillions drove to the opposite side: the great man

H h 2

stared,

stared, and perhaps mistook me for another great man, from the impudence of my servant. We passed to windward of this Nobleman and his suite, and involved the Orders of St. George and St. Walde-mar in a cloud of dust. I reprimanded the coachman for behaving so insolently. He repeated his oaths, and said, "that every person should keep to the right hand;" and then he continued his song.

I was much pleased lately with the behaviour of a soldier of a Russian regiment who, in their march, halted in our neighbourhood in order to procure fresh horses for their baggage waggons. The Sheriff of the district, who is a God among the peasantry, arrived at the post-house, and sent his Starosts or Messengers into the villages, to find a supply of cattle and boors. The Corporal of the advanced guard complained that the number brought in was not sufficient. The Sheriff told him. "that he would order him to be tied and whipped, if he dared to give
" di-

“ directions or opinions.” The son of Mars, in one of Corporal Trim’s attitudes, replied sharply, “ that he had a title to “ speak.” The Sheriff asked him “ if he “ knew who he talked to ? ” “ Yes,” said the Corporal, “ it is your duty to collect “ horses, and mine to see that the number “ is sufficient for our company.” The Sheriff stormed, and bestowing the accustomed oaths, repeated the various dignities of his office. The Corporal asserted, “ that he was as good as him ; that he was “ a foldier, had fought for his country, and “ was bound to obey his Officers only.” The Magistrate and Captain lowered his tone, though he was more than half seas over. But that he might keep up his authority and respect among the peasantry, who had listened to the dispute, he ordered two or three of them to be whipped, under pretence of their having been dilatory in coming with their cavalry.

I witnessed this whipping. I had never seen the operation before in Russia by pub-

lic sentence. If the execution is always so gentle as it was in the present case, too much has been said about it by Travellers. The peasants, one after the other, placed upon their hands and knees, received a few strokes from a Starost, with a small wand, upon their backs. The Deputy Sheriff, or, as they call him, Lieutenant, is a German Nobleman, a man of the most polite and gentle manners, very unfit for his present post, but very capable of a better and more exalted rank. He avoids assuming his titles. The Finland peasants have no respect for him, as he seldom orders them to be beat. They are not like the Russian peasants, sensible of favours of this nature: yet, to say truth, both of them require to be kept in order by a strict hand. The Russian is very sensible of obligations and kind usage; but he is apt to abuse favour, and to form expectations incompatible with his present situation.—He has as yet no idea of the nature of freedom, otherwise than the liberty of doing every thing without fear of blows.

The

The Deputy Sheriff shrinks when he is under the necessity of ordering punishment: he does not seem to think the punishment unnecessary, but his gentle soul regrets that he must see the execution of justice.

He lives in a small wooden house at Oranienbaum, with an old mother, and a sister. His pay does not exceed 50l. a year, yet he appears cheerful, and struggles to conceal his sorrows from the world. His brother Officers complain, that they cannot trust him in any matter which requires a severe executioner.

LETTER XLIII.

*Russian Climate---Of the Hot and Cold Baths,
their ill Effects upon the Constitution of the
Natives---The Russians enabled to bear
Cold by warm Furs alone---Physical and
Moral Effects of the Baths.*

Ingria, Jan. 1791.

MANKIND were first placed in a fine climate: they have, to this day, an aversion to burning suns and chilling frosts; nor do I believe that they made choice of these latitudes where the extremes are felt, particularly of cold, or that any necessity would have driven them to the Poles. I rather imagine that the climates have altered, and that a gradual alteration in these, has reconciled the inhabitants to rigours, otherwise insupportable.

It

It may be urged, why are not other animals as well as man found here, the same as in other countries, and for the same reasons?

It has been nearly proved by Naturalists, that the Elephant, now only found in warm latitudes, was once a native of Siberia. That the animals of warm and hot climates do not now exist in the north, may be owing to the want of those resources against cold, which the ingenuity of man found out.

I think I view the sagacious Monarch of the Woods, retiring with slow and sullen step from the northern deserts—hear him growling with agony, as he ascends the mountains of Tibet, and casting back a wishful eye to his native plains!

A celebrated Writer (Mr. Pallas) has given up his former opinion regarding the existence of the Elephant in Siberia, and now thinks, from the situation in which
their

their bones are found, that the flood has washed them thither from India, after the animals had been destroyed. The marine strata covering these bones, no doubt prove, that the action of the waters occasions their present appearance: but does this prove, too, that these animals were not natives of Siberia? Is it not possible that they may have been drowned here as well as in India?

Whether the generations of the north have made choice of their situation, or no, they seem to be very well pleased with it, for they are always singing or dancing, when they are not eating and drinking, or sleeping.

It is a generally received opinion, that the hot and cold baths used by the northern nations, harden and steel their constitutions against the severity of climate; and the Writers upon the northern climates tell us, that the human body, by plunging from the hot to the cold bath,

is

is tempered like iron : but perhaps what may temper iron, may not temper flesh and blood.

The rapid change from Summer to Winter, the only seasons they know, they rehearse upon their bodies, by plunging from the hot to the cold baths ; like criminals, who, doomed to receive yearly a cruel flogging, daily flog themselves, to harden their backs.

I apprehend, however, from some little knowledge of the people, that these human furnaces, and ice cellars, have a contrary tendency. Nature hates extremes, nor is to be brought by violent, but by slow degrees to endure them. The hardiness acquired is only artificial, and consists merely in suffering an operation with ease, which others could not bear at all.

The quick transitions of the northern climate, form of themselves a natural bath.

It

It might be more prudent to endeavour to evade the foe, than to brave him.

A bath, moderately heated in Winter, is absolutely necessary in Russia, to preserve health; and what is very much connected with health, to preserve cleanliness. The natives content themselves with boiling and freezing their bodies once a week, and, trusting to this ablution, they care not how dirty they are the rest of the year. In fact, the baths, as they now use them, occasion dirtier habits than if they never used them; for in this case, they might find the necessity of wearing clean linen, and other parts of dress, as well as of washing their hands and faces; and the heat of Summer would drive them into the rivers.

The cooling stream, so much celebrated by all nations for the purposes of health, has no charms in the eyes of a Russian: he uses it indeed, but in an unnatural way. The stoves in the houses of the common

common people, are always heated to a degree little short of that in the hot bath, without regard to the season; and, unless when the trial of hardihood comes on, they are in a constant stew.

They set cold and heat at defiance in the baths, and yet never go without doors in cold weather, unless when wrapped up in furs, which enable foreigners to go out too, as well as the natives: now, if the Russian cannot bear cold, with less clothing than foreigners, does not this prove the inefficacy of the baths? Nay, foreigners bear with more cold than the Russians, and with a dress less warm, at their first arrival here, and until their constitutions are weakened by the use of stoves, ill regulated in their heat.

The sheep-skin is of vast service to the back of a Russian. It is this, not he, that withstands the rigour of the climate: his very face is defended by a shaggy beard.

I am

I am far from meaning to insinuate that the Russians are not a hardy race; I only lament that they hurt a natural strength and vigour of body, by using unnatural methods to increase them. The children of the Russians chiefly are to be admired for undergoing the trial of the hot and cold bath; many, however, fall victims to this infernal practice. A few months' use, to those who pass the ordeal, reconciles them to it: a few years' use, renders the bath necessary to their existence; and at last, it becomes their greatest luxury—as among the higher classes of men, to eat and drink substances of the hottest nature, and then to swallow ice creams, to cool their burning stomachs. Nature at first rejects these poisons, but at last yields, and even grows fond of her destroyer.

The eyes of a Russian gladden with rapture when he speaks of the bagnio; it is his *ne plus ultra* of mortal bliss. In the hot bath they are treated nearly in the same voluptuous manner as in the baths of
of

of Asia; from which quarter, indeed, all their customs are copied, or perhaps originally the same; but with this difference in favour of sensuality in Russia, that the lower ranks sometimes bathe together promiscuously.

Before I ventured to trust to my own observations concerning the effect of the hot and cold baths, I made particular inquiry among the most intelligent of the natives. They confessed, that the immoderate use of the bath occasioned several diseases: they particularly mentioned the rheumatism. Mr. Pallas, in a conversation which I had with him upon this subject, corroborated this opinion. It is well known that the natives are soon cut off by illness, which I attribute to those baths. All violent remedies have the effect of making us appear unexhausted to the last moment: all Nature is racked to force symptoms of life, but the moment arrives when every fibre breaks, as at the signal of death, and down they are hurled to the grave. A
Russian

Russian has no fear of consequences: he has little fear of any kind; and whatever happens, they say, as in Asia, "it is the will of God!" When Winter, or when Summer approaches, they only bring to their recollection what dress, what holidays, or what work is peculiar to the season. They face, unconcernedly, heat or cold, yet prefer warmth; and would seem to encounter Wintry storms with the greater boldness, as they renew the pleasure of returning to their cabins.

The face of a Russian is defended by a shaggy beard, and those who shave, tie a napkin around their cheeks in cold weather. From this custom, the Russians might be called effeminate, as they are called hardy, from going with their necks bare. In both cases, we recognize the influence of custom.

The Russian recruit, taken from his warm hut and sheep-skin, is, in Winter, the most pitiable creature upon earth. I
have

have seen them frequently trembling in their march through the streets, and hardly able to hold their muskets, while their countrymen, dressed in furs, were walking about at their ease. The soldier uses the baths, but the virtue of these does not appear, *unless under a sheep-skin*: and he would prefer his old dress to all the baths in Russia. This cruel treatment of the army must occasion the death of thousands annually. Could there be the least impropriety in giving them a Winter dress, lined with fur? Though this might not be well adapted for regiments marching against an enemy, Winter is a time when Russia will seldom be troubled with any attack. Nothing can withstand this rigorous clime but warm furs; and any attempt to do it in another manner, would sacrifice millions of lives. Humanity, as well as the best policy calls upon the Russian Government to give a warmer dress to the soldiers in Winter.

Early in Summer, when the weather is
no way intemperate, either in respect of
I i heat

heat or cold, the Russians feel the approach of the evening, and quickly bury themselves in furs—while foreigners are walking about in a slight dress. In truth, the latter are too careless in this respect, and the former, if possible, too careful.

At the beginning and at the close of Summer, this climate is liable to very sudden transitions, in the course of a few hours, and requires attention to proper cloathing.

The violent use of the hot and cold baths making the bulk of the Russians sickly, they have not the appearance of health: the women, in a greater degree than the men, have in their appearance every mark of debility and old age. Neither the one nor the other have that firmness of flesh, that florid colour, that belongs to the lower ranks of the English. The Russian women endeavour to make up for these, by painting their faces---a practice universal among them, from the Princess to the cinder wench.

It

It is, perhaps, superfluous to observe, that those who, by the nature of their occupations, are most exposed to the cold, and have constant exercise, enjoy the best health: as the street swiftness, or coachmen, who are not much in their houses, and whose employment does not admit of their dozing like others, and sweating away their existence.

The moral effects arising from the violent use of the hot and cold baths, are as injurious to virtue and happiness, as their physical operation is to bodily health and vigour.

The preservation of beauty and of health in women, preserves virtue in men. So soon as they lose these, they are no longer the enchanting objects of desire. The principle of pleasure is destroyed by the warm baths---at the same time that they nurture lascivious inclinations, and early prostitution. Hence indifference, inattention, disgust, and many crimes disgraceful to human nature.

LETTER XLIV.

*Plan for Reformation in the Management
of the Russian Hospitals---Anecdote of M.
Plestcheyeff---General Description of the
Russian Empire, its Produce and Commerce.
—The British Commerce with Russia ill
conducted---Proposal for transplanting the
whole Nation of Finlanders to the Ukraine.*

St. Petersburg, March, 1791.

I HAVE submitted the first part of my paper upon the Russian Marine Hospitals to Admiral Kruse, and to Her Imperial Majesty's Physician, Doctor Rogerfon.--- They have, as far as it goes, approved of it. Several of the Captains of the Russian fleet have likewise seen, and given it their approbation. I was lately introduced to Mons. Plestcheyeff, Secretary to His Imperial Highness the Grand Duke. I submitted

mitted the plan to this Gentleman, who likewise did me the honour to approve of it. Monf. Pleftcheyeff, who is a Captain in the Ruffian fleet, has undertaken to have the plan tranſlated into the Ruffian language, and to preſent it to Count Tcher-nicheff, Firſt Lord of the Admiralty. It has been recommended to me to draw out a ſecond part of obſervations, and to point out more particularly the evils I diſcover in the management of the Marine Hoſpitals. I have not now time to execute this, being on the point of ſetting off for England. Having the materials with me, I ſhall draw up the ſecond part upon my arrival in London, and give it to Count Warontzoff, to tranſmit to his Court.--- Both the naval and army hoſpitals are in the ſame wretched ſtate. Since my plan has been approved of by the firſt Officers and Phyſicians in the Ruffian ſervice, I am not without hopes that the Ruffian Government will take meaſures for carrying the propoſed reform into execution.

Monf. Pleſtcheyeff was, I think he ſaid, for ſeven years on board the Britiſh fleet, and latterly held the rank of Lieutenant. A picture in this Gentleman's drawing-room attracted my attention: it was the loſs of the Centaur, on her paſſage from the Weſt-Indies to England. Monſieur Pleſtcheyeff noticed the portraits of ſeveral Officers in the boat: "theſe," ſaid he, "I am well acquainted with." He mentioned their names, and particularly that of Captain Inglefield.

Monf. Pleſtcheyeff is the Author of a Geographical Account of the Ruſſian Empire, dedicated, by permiſſion, to Her Imperial Highneſs the Grand Dutcheſs. It contains a very exact account of all the provinces, their extent, produce, &c. As we have no book in our language which treats of this ſubject, and as none are more capable, or could have written with greater accuracy than Monf. Pleſtcheyeff, I ſhould wiſh to ſee a tranſlation of this work into Engliſh.

This

This world of empire, extending from the Dwina and Nieper, its western boundaries, to Kamschatka, and the Eastern Ocean, a length of four thousand miles, and from the Artic Pole to the Euxine and the Caspian Seas, embraces one-fourth part of the circumference of the Globe! —It has every variety of climate, and is inhabited by every variety of nations. Upon the coasts of the northern seas, frozen during nine months of the year, the Laplanders, the Samoeides, the Ostiaks, and various other tribes, dwell in tents and caves, little removed in civilization from the brute creation: beyond these, towards the north, life itself goes out: the islands in the northern ocean are uninhabitable. The Siberians, a mixture of Fins and Tartars, inhabit the northern and middle regions of the Moscovite Dominions in Asia. Their country is in many places fruitful; but as no part of it borders upon a navigable sea, its productions are of the less value, and the people little known. The iron and furs of Siberia are the only articles which the Russian mer-

chant finds, as yet, capable of bearing the expence of so long a conveyance to his warehouses at Petersburg.

The rivers of Siberia communicate with the Wolga; the Wolga, by lesser rivers, and canals, with the Neva: but notwithstanding this convenience of water carriage, the vast distance renders it impracticable to bring any other than the most valuable articles of commerce, to the ports upon the Baltic. The southern parts of Asiatic Russia are, in a proportionate degree, more fruitful than the middle provinces; but they labour under the same disadvantages, in point of commercial intercourse,

Siberia, with all these local inconveniencies, while her iron mines remain unexhausted, is an invaluable acquisition to Russia; and is a strong barrier to the encroachments of the Chinese and Tartars. The Russian Government is put to little expence in defending this barrier: a few small forts, garrisoned by irregular troops from among the Cossacs, who chiefly

ly support themselves in fruitful and thinly inhabited plains, are at all times equal to the defence of this frontier.

Siberia is watered by many fine and navigable rivers, which afford a plentiful supply of fish to the natives; but as their streams run towards the north, they are not attended with the advantage of a communication with a navigable sea.

European Russia has the Wolga upon the east, the Caspian and Black Seas upon the south, the Nieper and Dwina, before-mentioned, and the Baltic, to the south and west.

The Wolga, rising in the center of this empire, receiving in its course many rivers running from the Asiatic, as well as the European provinces, and discharging itself into the Caspian Sea, lays open to the Russian Merchants India and Persia. The Nieper and Dwina have their sources in White Russia, formerly a part of the kingdom

dom of Poland. The Nieper empties his stream into the Black Sea, and from thence the navigation into every country bordering upon the Mediterranean is short and easy. The Dwina, taking a contrary direction, runs into the Baltic, and with equal convenience opens a communication with France, Britain, Holland, and all the northern parts of Europe. It is to be remarked, too, that these rivers have their sources in the most fertile provinces, as they visit the richest, in their long course towards the east, south, and west, inviting the Russians to industry, to agriculture, and commerce.

The most considerable portion of this immense territory, in which are included the kingdoms of Kioff, Moscow, Twere, and Novogorod; the provinces of the Crimea, the Ukraine, Little and White Russia, and Livonia, are in the highest degree fertile, producing every species of corn, flax, hemp, and timber; from which last article tar is extracted: and from the better kinds

kinds is supplied that vast export of deal boards and masts from Petersburg, Wyburg, Narva, and Riga. These, and other species of Russian produce, employ yearly 1,000 sail of British shipping continually in exporting them! As yet, we have only had samples of the produce of Russia.—Two thousand sail of British vessels may yet be employed in it, and several hundreds, perhaps thousands more of British Factors, Merchants, and others, may be profitably and usefully engaged, as well at the Russian sea-ports, as at the inland mercantile cities. I will illustrate this subject, when I come more particularly to treat of the Russian commerce. The few Factors we have yet in this immense empire—their wealth, their consequent pride and obstinacy, have the effect of making the British importer pay upwards of 20 per cent. higher for his goods, than if no such monopoly existed; besides subjecting our commerce with Russia to numberless inconveniencies, and even creating misunderstandings between the English and Russians

fians here, and likewise between the two Courts.

The numerous herds, particularly of the Ukraine, supply the great quantities of tallow annually imported into Britain and other parts. So plentiful are provisions in the Ukraine, that it is a common practice to kill bullocks, merely to obtain their hides and fat, which is procured by squeezing the whole carcass, in a machine constructed for the purpose; what remains in the machine, after this operation, is thrown away, or used as manure. But indeed this Paradise is so thinly peopled, that the farmers are not always at the trouble of spreading manure: they prefer removing to a new spot, which the plough has never yet torn, and has been rendered fertile by the rotting of successive crops of tall grass, for centuries. The herds, although numerous, are unable to consume one-fiftieth part of the rich clover produced in every spot; and it is trodden under foot, or set on fire, by vagrant hordes, or by indolent husbandmen.

A ce-

A celebrated Writer recommends to the Russian Government, to people the Ukraine, by transplanting thither the natives of the frozen shores of Siberia, "which," says he, "are of no service either to themselves, or to mankind, in their present situation."

Experience has proved, that the northern are, of all nations, the most attached to their country; and of all northern nations, the barbarous inhabitants of Lapland, and the northern parts of Siberia, feel this *amor patriæ* the strongest. They cannot exist out of their native deserts. Every individual among them, who had been brought away by order of the Danish, Swedish, or Russian Governments, actually died of grief! The most gentle treatment, the most flattering distinctions seemed to have no other effect, than to raise in their minds a sad contrast between luxury and politeness, on the one hand; and rough but innocent homeliness on the other. Why then envy them their icy mountains and
in-

inclement skies? Nor is it good philosophy to force them from all that makes them happy, though it were not attended with such fatal consequences.

The only method to effect that plan, would be the cruel policy of depriving the parents of their children, before they had yet imbibed a love of kindred, or their country! Might it not be better to transplant the whole nation of Finlanders from the shores of the Baltic? A nation already accustomed to agriculture, naturally industrious, and of dispositions the very reverse of those of the more northern hordes, which make them abhor the idea of altering their simple, indolent manner of life. From what I know of the Finlanders, they might be easily prevailed upon to part with their rocks and sand, for the rich soil of the Ukraine.

It is true that Russia, bound by former treaties with Sweden, cannot remove the Finlanders, without breaking through such treaties:

treaties: but they have made war upon each other, contrary to these treaties; and to remove the Finlanders to the Ukraine, would be the most reasonable breach of faith that ever Russia, or Sweden, or any other Potentate or Power committed. The inclination of the Finlanders to agriculture, would make them prefer a country where they could live, to one where they may starve. Had they no inclination to agriculture, it would be as difficult to transplant them as to transplant the Ostiaks.

The execution of this plan would, besides, answer a grand political purpose.—The Finlanders are attached to the Swedes, from similarity in religion, and from being formerly the subjects of Sweden: Russia, therefore, by sending the Fins to a better country, and replacing them with Russians, would strengthen her frontier, and likewise relieve the poor Finlanders from that jealousy and ill-usage which they now suffer from petty tyrants in office, particularly

cularly in the time of war between Russia and Sweden.

It might, besides, banish every idea which Sweden does, or may entertain, with regard to the recovery of Finland in Russia, and thereby prevent those contests which may henceforth originate from such ideas.

The Russian Empire in Europe, consisting of the kingdoms and provinces above enumerated, and situated, for the most part, in the best climates, is considerably larger than any other in this quarter of the globe, and daily increasing in agriculture, population, and commerce.

APPENDIX.

*Words common to the SCOTCH, ICELANDERS,
and DANES, selected by Professor THOR-
KELYN, of Copenhagen.*

A.

Aith, an oath.

Auld, old.

Aught, eight, possession.

Awn, the beard of barley.

Awnie, bearded.

N. B. The termination of the Scotch adjectives of *in*, as *foughtin*, fought, are mere Icelandic.

B.

Bae, Icel. *Bær*, a farm.

Ba, *Bane*, way, Icel. *Bane*,

Bane, bone.

Bairn, *Barn*, a child.

K k

Bank,

Bank, a beam.

Bad, I did bid.

Backlins, coming back, returning. Icel. *Backlendis*.

Be, let be, cease.

Big, to build.

Biggin, building.

Beth, both.

Bit, little. Dan. *Bitte*, *Smaa*.

Bilow, Icel. *Bilgia*, a wave.

Bicker, a wooden dish.

Birkie, a clever fellow.

Bing, a heap of grain.

Blink, a smiling look ; or sometimes to shine, as a *blink* of the sun.

Blather, bladder.

Blast, Icel. *Blastr*, Dan. *Blest*, give me a blast of your pipe, *i. e.* give me a tune of your pipe.

Blessin, blessing.

Blyth, Icel. *Blidr*, sweet, humane, cheerful.

Boll, Icel. *Bolli*, a measure of corn.

Braw, fine, handsome.

Brae, the slope of a hill,

Braid, broad.

Brawlie, very well.

Breaken, breaking.

Bure, did bear.

Burn, a rivulet.

Burst, to burst.

Carle,

C.

Carle, a stout old man.

Carline, a stout old woman.

Cbiel, a vessel of about ten or twenty tuns.

Claith, cloth.

Cleed, to clothe.

Cove, a cavern.

Crave, to require, demand.

D.

Din, noise. Icel. *dinr*.

Dought, was able. Icel. *Dugade*.

Drag, to pull by force.

Druken, in the habit of drinking.

E.

Elf, Icel. *Alfr*, a middle being.

Ennu, in Caithness, moreover.

F.

Fand, did find.

Fiede, enmity.

Fells, German, felt.

Fell, the flesh under the skin, a level field, upon the top, or upon the side of a hill.

Fiende, Dan. *Fiende*, and vulgarly, *Fienden*, the Devil.

Flitter, to vibrate, like the wings of small birds.

Forbye, besides.

Forfoickin, *forfairn*, worn out, fatigued.

Forgie, to forgive.

Forgefket, jaded with fatigue.

Frae, from.

Fro-off, to and fro, off and to.

Fur, a furrow.

G.

Gae, to go. *Gaed*, went. *Gaen*, or *gane*, gone;

Gaun, going.

Gaet, or *Gate*, way or road.

Gate, a street.

Garmb, rags.

Gar, Icel. *Geru*, to force one to do any thing.

Gie, to give. *Gied*, gave. *Gien*, given.

Gimmer, a ewe, from one to two years old.

Gin, against.

Glowr, to stare, to look anxiously.

Gore, the blood of the heart.

Greet, to shed tears.

Gripe, Icel. *griep*.

Groufome, loathfomely grim.

Grove, Dan. *Grove*.

Gude, good.

H.

Hag, a sink or mire, in mosses or moors.

Hald,

Hald, to hold. *Halden*, or *holden*, as land held or holden by or of a person.

Hale, Dan. *Heel*. Icel. *Heill*, whole, likewise mended, or recovered.

Hame, home.

Herry, to plunder.

Het, hot.

Heeze, to elevate, to hoist.

Hov'd, swelled.

Hove, to swell.

Hofst, to cough, to hoop.

I.

I, in.

Ill-willie, ill-natured.

K.

Ken, to know. *Kent*, *Kend*, knew.

Kin, kindred.

Kirk, Icel. *Kirkia*. German, *Kirk*, a church.

L.

Lad, a common fellow, a servant. Icel. *Lid*.

Lang, long.

Laigh, low.

Lalland, *Loland*, *Lowlund*, the low country.

Let, a hindrance, to hinder, to stop. Icel. *Letia*.

Likwake, the service or ceremony in keeping a dead body three nights in a room lighted with candles.

Light,

Lith, any joint of the members of the body.

Icel. *Lidr*.

Loof, *Lof*, the palm of the hand. *Looves*, the plural of *Loof*.

Loup, Icel. *Hlaup*, and *Laup*, to leap.

M.

Maen, look. Icel. *Mæne*.

Maer, more.

Mæft, most.

Mal, to grind corn.

Man. *I man do*, i. e. I must do.

Mark, Icel. *Merkie*, to observe.

Maun, must.

Min, to remember.

Mikel, *Mukle*, *Meikle*, great.

Mudding, Sutherlandshire dialect. Dan. *Moding*.

Myfel, myself.

N.

Na, *Nae*, no.

Nit, a nut.

Norland, the north country.

Nowte, horned cattle. Icel. *Naut*. Dan. *Noet*, and *Noot*.

P.

Preen, Icel. *Prion*, a pin.

Prent, print.

Ream,

R.

Ream, cream.

Reave, to rob.

Reeke, smoke.

Rig, a ridge.

Roofe, to flatter, to praise.

S.

Sae, fo.

Sair, fore ; much or fore surpris'd. Dan. *Saare*
Forskræket.

Sang, a song.

Sark, a shirt.

Sel, self.

Scone, a kind of flat bread.

Sma, small.

Smack, to kiss, to taste: Icel. *Ec Smecki*. Dan.
Smager.

Smoor'd, Dan. *Smored*, annointed.

Sned, to cut off.

Sowp, a spoonful.

Spae, a prophecy, to prophecy.

Spier, to ask, to inquire. *Spiered*, inquired,

Spreckled, spotted.

Stane, and *Stein*, a stone.

Stark, stout, strong.

Steeve, firm.

Stock, the leg or stem of a plant.

Stot,

Stot, a young Bullock. Dan. *An Stoud*.

Sturt, trouble, to molest. Dan. *Befurket*.

Strae, straw—to die a *strae* death, i. e. to die in bed.

N. B. Our forefathers lay commonly upon straw, instead of feather-beds, and from that custom formed this phrase. The beds of the poor people in Scotland are straw.

Swain, a servant employed in agriculture. Icel. *Sveinn*.

Sward, Icel. *Swardr*, growing grass, grass growing on watery places, and collecting a stratum of earth.

Swinge, to beat, to whip.

Swollen, Icel. *Sollen*, fwelled.

T.

Tangel, Icel. *Paungull*. Dan. *Toengel*, sea weed.

Tbole, to suffer, bear, endure. Icel. *Thola*.

Thairms, and *Pharms*, the small guts. The bands furrounding the rims of Scotch spinning-wheels are called *phairm bands*.

Thud, to make noise, by striking, as with a hammer, against any thing.

Thrang, throng, a croud.

Thraw, to contradict; also to twist, as in making of straw, or other ropes.

Threeteen, thirteen.

Til,

Til, to go till him, i. e. to go to him.

Timmer, timber.

Tine, to lose. *Tint*, lost.

Toom, empty.

Tout, the blast of a horn.

Tow, a rope.

Town, a hamlet, a farm town.

Toyte, to totter like old age, or like a child.

Trow, to believe, true. *Troth*, it is truth.

Twa, two.

Twin, two.

Tyke, a dog; but generally applied to a large
furly dog.

U.

Unkend, unknown.

W.

Wad, Icel. *Vedia*, to lay bets or wagers.

Wad, Icel. *Ved*, *Pignus*, *Cautio*, a pledge.

Wadfete, Icel. *Vedsetia*, & *setia at veda*, to mortgage.

Wae, woe.

Wair, to lay out money, to expend.

Wale, choice.

Wald, chose, chosen, selected.

Wame, the belly.

Wauken, to awake. Icel. *Vakna*. Dan. *Vaagne*.

Wat, Icel. *Ec Weit*. I *wat*, I know. I *watne*,
I do not know.

Wauket, Icel. *Aukit*, the process of thickening,
particularly clothes.

Winnock, a window.

Whare, where.

Wond, Dan. *Ondt*, Icel. *Wondr*, live, or lived.

Wont, used, or accustomed to do. I am *wont*
time, or usual time.

Wyte, blame, to blame.

Y.

Yule, Christmas.









